A DICTIONARY OF JAPANESE PARTICLES

Sue A. Kawashima

KODANSHA INTERNATIONAL
Tokyo • New York • London

To my students

PREFACE

Although there are many difficult grammatical points that a student must master in learning the Japanese language, particles belong in a class by themselves. Appearing in nearly every sentence, they are absolutely crucial to a proper understanding of the intended meaning. A student may possess a large vocabulary and a good grasp of verb conjugation, but without a firm command of particles, he or she cannot hope to construct consistently correct sentences. In choice and placement, particles can completely transform the meaning of two sentences that are otherwise exactly the same.

Throughout my teaching career I have felt that particles were the key to learning Japanese. Though not a linguist, I have many years of teaching experience, and in this book I hope to have made good use of that experience by helping students come to a better understanding of particle usage. If the student benefits in any substantial way, I will feel my efforts have been rewarded.

I wish to thank my students at Hunter College, who, by posing many thought-provoking questions, have contributed to the making of this book.

I would also like to express my sincere gratitude tō Tetsuo Kuramochi of Kodansha International, who helped to bring about this incarnation of the original edition, *Particles Plus.*

Lastly, I am indebted for much of the translation herein to my daughter, a professor of Japanese literature, who has edited all of my work.

Sue A. Kawashima
Spring, 1999

Previously published by Harcourt Brace Jovanovich Japan as *Particles Plus.*

Distributed in the United States by Kodansha America, Inc., 575 Lexington Avenue, New York N.Y. 10022, and in the United Kingdom and continental Europe by Kodansha Europe Ltd., 95 Aldwych, London WC2B 4JF. Published by Kodansha International Ltd., 17-14 Otowa 1-chome, Bunkyo-ku, Tokyo 112-8652, and Kodansha America, Inc.

Copyright © 1999 by Sue A. Kawashima
All rights reserved. Printed in Japan
First edition, 1999
99 00 01 02 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
ISBN 4-7700-2352-9

CONTENTS

PREFACE
INTRODUCTION i

(C.P. = Combination Particles)
BA ば 1
BAKARI ばかり 5
DAKE だけ 10
DAKE-NI だけに(C.P.) 13
DANO だの 14
DATTE だって 15
DE で 17
DEMO でも 26
DOKORO どころ 29
DOKOROKA どころか 29
DOMO ども 30
E へ 30
GA が 34
GA-NA(GA-NAA) が-な(が-なあ)(C.P.) 42
GATERA がてら 42
HODO ほど 43
HOKA ほか 45
I い 45
KA か 46
KA-I かい(C.P.) 51
KA-NA(KA-NAA) か-な(か-なあ)(C.P.) 52
KARA から 53
KARA-SHITE から-して(C.P.) 65
KASHIRA かしら 66
KE け 69

KEREDOMO(KEREDO,KEDO,KEDOMO)
けれども(けれど、けど、けども) …… 70
KIRI きり …… 73
KOSO こそ …… 75
KOTO こと …… 77
KURAI(GURAI) くらい(ぐらい) …… 79
KUSE-NI くせ-に(C.P.) …… 81
MADE まで …… 83
MADE-MO まで-も(C.P.) …… 88
MADE-NI まで-に(C.P.) …… 89
MO も …… 91
MONO もの …… 98
MONO-DE(MON-DE) もの-で(もん-で) (C.P.) …… 99
MONOKA(MONKA) ものか(もんか) …… 100
MONONARA(MON-NARA) ものなら(もん-なら) …… 101
MONONO ものの …… 102
MONO-O もの-を …… 103
NA(NAA) な(なあ) …… 105
NADO(NANKA) など(なんか) …… 108
NAGARA ながら …… 110
NAGARA-MO ながら-も(C.P.) …… 111
NANTE なんて …… 112
NARI なり …… 113
N-DE ん-で(C.P.) …… 115
NE(NEE) ね(ねえ) …… 116
NI に …… 118
NI-MO に-も(C.P.) …… 136
NI-MO-KAKAWARA-ZU に-も-かかわら-ず(C.P.) …… 137
NI-OI-TE に-おい-て(C.P.) …… 138
NI-SHITE に-して(C.P.) …… 140
NI-SHITE-MO に-して-も(C.P.) …… 140
NI-SHITE-WA に-して-は(C.P.) …… 141
NITE にて …… 142
NO(N) の(ん) …… 143

NO-DA(N-DA)　の-だ(ん-だ)(C.P.) …… 158
NO-DAROO(N-DAROO)　の-だろう(ん-だろう)(C.P.) …… 159
NODE(N-DE)　ので(ん-で) …… 160
NO-DE　の-で(C.P.) …… 162
NO-DE ARU　の-である(C.P.) …… 163
NO-DESHOO(N-DESHOO)　の-でしょう(ん-でしょう)(C.P.) …… 164
NO-DESU(N-DESU)　の-です(ん-です)(C.P.) …… 164
NOMI　のみ …… 166
NONI　のに …… 167
NO-NI　の-に(C.P.) …… 169
O(WO)　を …… 170
SA　さ …… 177
SAE　さえ …… 179
SHI　し …… 180
SHIKA　しか …… 182
SHIMO　しも …… 183
SURA　すら …… 185
TARA　たら …… 186
TARI　たり …… 188
TATTE　たって …… 189
TE　て …… 190
TEBA　てば …… 195
TEMO(DEMO)　ても(でも) …… 196
TE-NE　て-ね(C.P.) …… 198
TE-WA　て-は(C.P.) …… 198
TO　と …… 200
TO-IE-BA　と-いえ-ば(C.P.) …… 210
TO-II　と-いい(C.P.) …… 210
TO-ITTA　と-いった(C.P.) …… 211
TO-ITTE　と-いって(C.P.) …… 211
TO-IWA-ZU　と-いわ-ず(C.P.) …… 212
TOKA　とか …… 213
TOKORO　ところ …… 215
TOKORODE　ところで …… 215

TOKORO-E ところ-へ(C.P.) …… 216
TOKOROGA ところが …… 216
TOKORO-O ところ-を …… 217
TOMO とも …… 218
TO-MO と-も(C.P.) …… 220
TO-MO-ARE と-も-あれ(C.P.) …… 220
TO-SHI-TE と-し-て(C.P.) …… 222
TO-SHITE-MO と-して-も(C.P.) …… 223
TO-SHITE-WA と-して-は(C.P.) …… 224
TO-WA と-は(C.P.) …… 225
TO-WA-IE と-は-いえ(C.P.) …… 226
TO-YUU と-いう(C.P.) …… 227
TO-YUU-KOTO-WA と-いう-こと-は(C.P.) …… 229
TO-YUU-NO-WA(MO) と-いう-の-は(も)(C.P.) …… 230
TO-YUU-TO と-いう-と(C.P.) …… 231
TTE って …… 232
WA は …… 235
WA わ …… 239
YA や …… 241
YAI やい …… 246
YA-INA-YA や-いな-や(C.P.) …… 247
YARA やら …… 248
YO よ …… 251
YORI より …… 253
ZE ぜ …… 257
ZO ぞ …… 258
ZUTSU ずつ …… 259

MASTERING PARTICLES : EXERCISES …… 261
ANSWER KEYS …… 319
PATTERNS …… 324
GLOSSARY (English-Japanese) …… 329
GLOSSARY (Japanese-English) …… 339

INTRODUCTION

DEFINITION OF PARTICLES

1) A particle (助詞 *joshi*) in the Japanese language follows a word to:
   A) show its relationship to other words in a sentence, and/or
   B) give that word a particular meaning or nuance.
2) Unlike verbs, adjectives and adverbs, particles are not inflected, and therefore stay in the same form regardless of where they appear in a sentence.
3) Generally, particles are considered to be equivalent to prepositions, conjunctions and interjections of the English language; of these three, the majority of particles belong to the first category.
4) A particle should always be placed after the word it modifies, which means that in translating them into English, the word order should be changed.

   Example:

   English phrase: "top of the desk"

   Japanese phrase: tsukue no ue = "(the) desk of top"

WHEN TO USE PARTICLES

Consider the following sentence: "My mother *and* my father had dinner *at* a restaurant *in* Tokyo *with* a friend."

This example contains three prepositions (at, in, with) and one conjunction (and). However, the same sentence translated into Japanese is:

"Watashi *no* haha *to* chichi *wa* tomodachi *to* issho *ni* tookyoo *no* resutoran *de* yuushoku *o* tabe-mashita."

There are eight particles in the above example. Note, then, two points:

1) You cannot simply replace English prepositions, conjunctions and interjections with particles; there are particles that cannot be translated into English but still have vital functions in a Japanese sentence.

2) Nouns are usually followed by particles.

When you are just starting to learn Japanese, get into the habit of looking for the appropriate particle every time you see a noun. Of course, there are exceptions to this rule:

A) Particles are normally not placed directly before a copula (desu, da, deshita, datta, etc.).

Example: "This is an apple." = kore wa ringo desu.

Note the absence of any particles before "desu," even though *ringo* ("apple") is a noun.

B) Words that express quantity, extent, or numbers are not usually followed by particles, even though they are considered nouns.

Example: "Please give me three of those." = sore o mit-tsu kudasai.

Note that *mit-tsu* ("three") is not followed by a particle, though it is considered a noun.

Particles also follow verbs, adjectives, and adverbs, though less frequently than nouns. Learning when to use particles after verbs, adjectives,

and adverbs is really a matter of memorization.

FUNCTIONS OF PARTICLES

As stated above, particles are vital in Japanese. Consider the case of pronouns in English: "I," "my," and "me" are separate words that independently signify their functions in a sentence. However, in Japanese, there is one word *watashi* that serves as the basic "stem" for the singular first-person pronoun, and the subjective, possessive, and objective cases are constructed in the following ways, through the use of particles:

"I" = watashi [wa]/watashi [ga]	わたし[は]/わたし[が]
"my" = watashi [no]	わたし[の]
"me" = watashi [ni]/watashi [o (wo)]	わたし[に]/わたし[を]

It's clear, then, that only through the use of particles can the precise function of the stem "watashi" be identified.

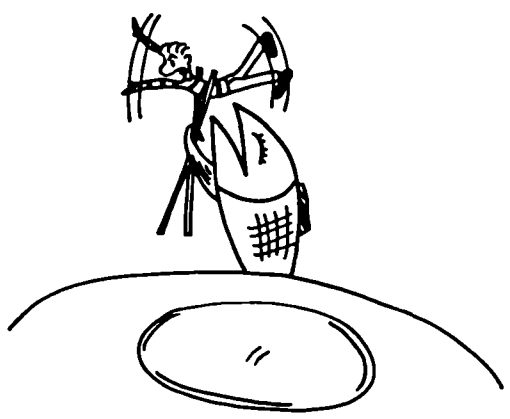
Let's look at another set of examples. The meaning of the English sentence "I eat fish" is straightforward: the subject is "I," the verb "eat" is a transitive verb that requires an object, which is "fish" in this case. However, if we translate it into Japanese without particles, it would look like this:

watashi sakana taberu.

As it stands, this group of words has no apparent meaning. If we were to insert some possible particles after the two nouns, we can create sentences with vastly different meanings (particles are enclosed in squares):

watashi [wa] sakana [o] taberu. “I eat fish” (the meaning of the original English sentence)

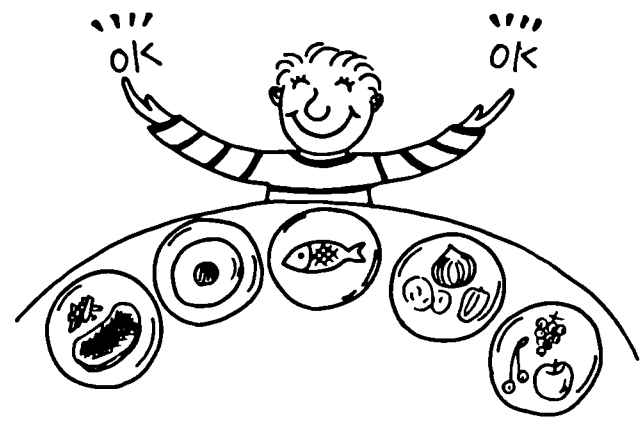
watashi [o] sakana [ga] taberu. “The fish eats me.”



watashi [mo] sakana [o] taberu. “I, too, eat fish.”

watashi [to] sakana [ga] taberu. “The fish and I eat (something).”

watashi [wa] sakana [mo] taberu. "I eat fish also (as well as other things)."



watashi [mo] sakana [wa] taberu. "Even I eat (it if it's) fish."

There are other possibilities as well, but you can see from these rather humorous examples that you could be communicating completely different messages depending on the particles you choose, even though your nouns, verbs, and other parts of speech in a sentence remain the same! It is therefore essential for you to grasp the usage of particles in order to master the Japanese language.

FEATURES OF THIS BOOK

This book is designed for use by students of Japanese at almost all levels. For the beginners, the most fundamental particles are shown in bold face, explained in detail, and accompanied by illustrations where appropri-

ate. Since this book contains most particles in the Japanese language with their usages and examples, even intermediate- and advanced-level students can use it as a reference tool.

(1) Only particles used in Modern Japanese are included. Some archaic or very rarely-used particles have been omitted. Certain combination particles (C.P.) called rengo (連語) which frequently occur are also explained in this book. The combination particle (C.P.) combines particles and other words such as adverbs, copulas, etc.

(2) Particles have squares around them every time they appear in an example sentence (such as [no]), and parts of speech of the words, or phrases/clauses that they modify are underlined: $_{n.}$_____ for nouns, $_{v.}$_____ for verbs, $_{adj.}$_____ for adjectives, $_{adv.}$_____ for adverbs, $_{c.}$_____ for copulas, $_{cl.}$_____ for clauses, $_{ph.}$_____ for phrases, etc. However, certain patterns and phrases are not underlined, since they are considered one unit, including the particle enclosed in the square. Their usages are listed in outline form, together with the closest approximate English equivalents where applicable. Sample sentences using the particles follow their definitions.

(3) Particles are listed in alphabetical order in dictionary form, and there is a glossary at the back that lists the approximate English meanings and the corresponding particles. Also, for quick reference, see the chart on the endpapers.

(4) Although the Japanese sentences contain mostly Joo-yoo-Kanji (most commonly used standard Kanji), there are a few exceptions where other Kanji appear.

(5) Some sample sentences contain some compounds that are slightly advanced, but most of the sample sentences rely on basic vocabulary so that they are easy to understand, even for beginning-level students.

(6) All Kanji (Chinese characters) are accompanied by furigana (phonetic readings in hiragana) over them so that the student can immediately recognize their pronunciation.

(7) Grammar is explained in a way that English-speaking students can understand clearly; consequently, the method differs from the way grammar is taught to native Japanese speakers.

(8) Question marks appear much less frequently in a Japanese question than in English. However, in order to clearly indicate interrogative sentences, they are followed by question marks.

(9) There are exercises at the back of the book that are designed to familiarize the beginning-level student with the most fundamental particles. An answer key is also provided.

(10) The Romanization system of this book basically follows the Hepburn system as shown in the chart below.

aあ	ア	iい	イ	uう	ウ	eえ	エ	oお	オ
kaか	カ	kiき	キ	kuく	ク	keけ	ケ	koこ	コ
saさ	サ	shiし	シ	suす	ス	seせ	セ	soそ	ソ
taた	タ	chiち	チ	tsuつ	ツ	teて	テ	toと	ト
naな	ナ	niに	ニ	nuぬ	ヌ	neね	ネ	noの	ノ
haは	ハ	hiひ	ヒ	fuふ	フ	heへ	ヘ	hoほ	ホ
maま	マ	miみ	ミ	muむ	ム	meめ	メ	moも	モ
yaや	ヤ	—		yuゆ	ユ	—		yoよ	ヨ

raら	ラ	riり	リ	ruる	ル	reれ	レ	roろ	ロ
waわ	ワ	—		—		—		o(wo)を	ヲ
nん	ン								
gaが	ガ	giぎ	ギ	guぐ	グ	geげ	ゲ	goご	ゴ
zaざ	ザ	ziじ	ジ	zuず	ズ	zeぜ	ゼ	zoぞ	ゾ
daだ	ダ	jiぢ	ヂ	zuづ	ヅ	deで	デ	doど	ド
baば	バ	biび	ビ	buぶ	ブ	beべ	ベ	boぼ	ボ
paぱ	パ	piぴ	ピ	puぷ	プ	peぺ	ペ	poぽ	ポ

kyaきゃ	キャ	kyuきゅ	キュ	kyoきょ	キョ
shaしゃ	シャ	shuしゅ	シュ	shoしょ	ショ
chaちゃ	チャ	chuちゅ	チュ	choちょ	チョ
nyaにゃ	ニャ	nyuにゅ	ニュ	nyoにょ	ニョ
hyaひゃ	ヒャ	hyuひゅ	ヒュ	hyoひょ	ヒョ
myaみゃ	ミャ	myuみゅ	ミュ	myoみょ	ミョ
ryaりゃ	リャ	ryuりゅ	リュ	ryoりょ	リョ
jaじゃ	ジャ	juじゅ	ジュ	joじょ	ジョ
byaびゃ	ビャ	byuびゅ	ビュ	byoびょ	ビョ
pyaぴゃ	ピャ	pyuぴゅ	ピュ	pyoぴょ	ピョ

(a) Long vowels are indicated by two vowels placed one after the other.

Example: Tokyo ..... Tookyoo

The second vowel will remind the beginning-level student that there should be a hiragana character there that stands in for the long vowel sound.

Example: To o kyo o (Tokyo) ; e e ga (movie)
と う きょう　　え い が

(b) Two identical vowels that are placed right next to each other are separated by hyphens, in order to avoid confusion with the long vowel sound.

Example: kinoo (yesterday)

mono-o (particle "mono" + another particle "o")

(c) Some words are divided by hyphens to indicate the separate syllables, or the separate units, that compose the word, so that it is easier to identify these elements visually.

Examples: ありません……ari-masen (there is/are not)

勉強する……benkyoo-suru (to study)

生き字引……iki-jibiki (a walking dictionary)

思い出す……omoi-dasu (to remenber)

女……on-na (a woman)

している……shite-iru (be doing)

食べたい……tabe-tai (to want to eat)

読まない……yoma-nai (do not read)

(d) The honorific prefixes "o" and "go" are considered as being part of the word, and therefore are not set off by a hyphen.

Example: oree (appreciation) omatsuri (festival)

gohan (meal) gochisoo (delicacies)

List of Abbreviations

adj. = adjective

adv. = adverb

c. = copula (da/desu, datta/deshita, daroo/deshoo, etc.)

cl. = clause

conj. = conjunction

c.p. = combination particle

g. = gerund (te/de form)

interj. = interjection

m. = mimesis

n. = noun (including pronouns), and nominal

o. = onomatopoeia

p. = particle

ph. = phrase

BA ば

1. Presents a condition that would result in the clause that follows.

English approximation: "if ..."

A) 今出かけれ[ば]間に合いますよ。

Ima $_{v.}$dekakere [ba] maniai-masu yo.

If you leave now, you'll make it in time.

B) こんなペンでもよけれ[ば]どうぞ。

Kon-na pen demo $_{adj.}$yokere [ba] doozo.

If this sort of pen is okay with you, go ahead (and use it). (implication: the pen is not so great.)

C) 雨さえ降れ[ば]豊作は間違いないのだが。

Ame sae $_{v.}$fure [ba] hoosaku wa machigai-nai noda ga.

If only it would rain, there's sure to be a bountiful harvest.

2. Shows a cause-and-effect relationship between the topic it presents and the clause or phrase that follows.

English approximation: "when (something happens) ..." (instead of "if ..." above)

A) こおろぎが鳴き出せ[ば]秋も間近い。

Koorogi ga $_{v.}$naki-dase [ba] aki mo ma-jikai.

When crickets start to chirp, autumn is just around the corner.

B) 夕焼けになれ[ば]翌日は天気になる。

Yuuyake ni $_{v.}$nare [ba] yokujitsu wa tenki ni naru.

When there's a vivid sunset, the next day will be clear.

3. In set patterns such as "... to ie ba ～といえば," and "... nara ba ～な

らば," indicates the topic which is to be discussed in the phrase or clause that follows.

English approximation: the nuance is similar to "speaking of (topic)...," "in terms of (topic)...," or "according to (topic)..."

A) おすしなら[ば]あの店(みせ)がおいしいですよ。

Osushi c. nara [ba] ano mise ga oishii desu yo.

In terms of sushi, that restaurant is a good one.

B) うわさによれ[ば]、彼女(かのじょ)は恋人(こいびと)と別(わか)れたらしい。

Uwasa ni v. yore [ba], kanojo wa koibito to wakareta rashii.

According to rumors, she broke up with her boyfriend.

C) ミステリー映画(えいが)と言(い)え[ば]、やっはりヒッチコックのが一番(いちばん)だね。

Misuterii eega to v. ie [ba], yappari Hicchikokku no ga ichiban da ne.

Speaking of mystery movies, Hitchcock's are the best after all, don't you think?

4. Similar to the meanings of the patterns "... suru to ～すると" and "... shita tokoro ga ～したところが."

English approximation: "considering (something, it is evident that ...)"

A) 前(まえ)の仕事(しごと)を思(おも)え[ば]、今(いま)の仕事(しごと)は楽(らく)なものです。

Mae no shigoto o v. omoe [ba], ima no shigoto wa rakuna mono desu.

Considering my former job, my current job is pretty easy.

B) 世論調査(よろんちょうさ)からみれ[ば]、その政治家(せいじか)の人気(にんき)はかなり落(お)ちたようだ。

Yoron-choosa kara v. mire [ba], sono seejika no ninki wa kanari ochita yoo da.

In looking at the public opinion polls, it seems that the politician's popularity has fallen quite a bit.

5. In a "... mo ...ba ～も～ば" pattern, serves to list events, categories and things.

English approximation: "(something) and (something) also," or "neither ... nor ..."

A) 女(おんな)もいれ[ば]男(おとこ)もいる。

On-na mo $_{v.}$ ire [ba] otoko mo iru.

There are women, and there are also men.

B) 食(た)べる物(もの)もなけれ[ば]、住(す)む所(ところ)もない。

Taberu mono mo $_{v.}$ nakere [ba], sumu tokoro mo nai.

There isn't anything to eat, or anywhere to live. (i.e. There's neither food nor shelter.)

C) 彼女(かのじょ)はピアノも弾(ひ)け[ば]絵(え)もかく多才(たさい)な人(ひと)です。

Kanojo wa piano mo $_{v.}$ hike [ba] e mo kaku tasai na hito desu.

She's a multi-talented person who can play the piano and paint as well.

6. In the patterns "ne ba nara-nai ねばならない" and "nakere ba nara-nai/nari-masen なければならない/なりません," to indicate that something has to be done or that a standard must be observed.

English approximation: "must do (something)."

A) 東京(とうきょう)には毎月出張(まいつきしゅっちょう)で行(い)かなけれ[ば]なりません。

Tookyoo ni wa maitsuki shucchoo de $_{ph.}$ ikanakere [ba] nar-imasen.

(I) have to go to Tokyo every month on business trips.

B) 予算内で計画を立てねば ならない。

Yosan-nai de keekaku o ph.tatene ba naranai.

(I) must devise plans within the budget.

C) 人との約束は守らなければ ならない。

Hito to no yakusoku wa ph.mamoranakere ba naranai.

One has to keep promises one makes to others.

7. In set patterns such as "iwa ba いわば" and "tatoe ba たとえば."

English approximation: "let us say ..." or "so to speak."

A) ハロウィーンは、たとえ ば 日本のお盆のようなものです。

Harowiin wa, ph.tatoe ba nihon no obon no yoo na mono desu.

Halloween is, let us say, similar to the Obon festival in Japan.

B) 彼は、いわ ば 生き字引のようなものだ。

Kare wa, ph.iwa ba iki-jibiki no yoo na mono da.

He is, so to speak, like a living dictionary.

8. In the set pattern "naze nara ba なぜならば."

English approximation: "the reason being..." or "because..."

A) 時間があれば、汽車で行くべきだ。なぜなら ば その方が景色を十分楽しめるから。

Jikan ga are ba, kisha de iku beki da. ph.Naze nara ba sono hoo ga keshiki o juubun tanoshimeru kara.

If (you) have the time, (you) should go by train, because (you) will be able to fully enjoy the scenery that way.

B) 人に意地悪をしないほうがいい。なぜなら ば いつか自分に戻って来るからだ。

Hito ni ijiwaru o shi-nai hoo ga ii. ph.Naze nara ba itsuka jibun

ni modotte-kuru kara da.

One shouldn't do mean things to others, because some day, (your deeds) might be returned to you.

BAKARI ばかり

1. Indicates a limit.

1) Shows that something is always limited to a particular action, place, or thing. Similar to "dake だけ" or "nomi のみ."

English approximation: "always just doing (something)," or "doing only one thing all the time"

A) その子犬(こいぬ)はいつも眠(ねむ)って [ばかり] います。

Sono koinu wa itsumo g. nemutte [bakari] i-masu.

That puppy is always just sleeping.

B) いつまでも遊(あそ)んで [ばかり] いないで早(はや)く職(しょく)でも見(み)つけなさいよ。

Itsu made mo g. asonde [bakari] i-nai de hayaku shoku demo mitsuke nasai yo.

Why don't you stop playing around all the time and look for a job or something?

C) うちに [ばかり] いないで、たまには外出(がいしゅつ)しよう。

Uchi p. ni [bakari] i-nai de, tama ni wa gaishutsu-shiyoo.

Instead of just being at home all the time, let's go out once in a while.

2)

English approximation: "could only do (something)"

A) そのニュースを聞(き)いて、彼(かれ)はただおろおろする [ばかり] でした。

Sono nyuusu o kiite, kare wa tada v. oro-oro-suru [bakari] deshita.

Hearing that news, he could only panic.

B) 突然(とつぜん)の停電(ていでん)に人々(ひとびと)は右往左往(うおうさおう)する [ばかり] だった。

Totsuzen no teeden ni hito-bito wa v. uoo-saoo-suru [bakari] datta.

In the sudden blackout, all people could do was wander in confusion.

3) In the pattern "bakari ni ばかりに."

English approximation: the nuance is "solely due to (one cause), matters took a turn for the worse."

A) あの電車(でんしゃ)に乗(の)った [ばかり] に、事故(じこ)に遭(あ)った。

Ano densha ni v. notta [bakari] ni, jiko ni atta.

It was only because I got on that train that I was involved in an accident.

B) 犯罪(はんざい)の場(ば)にたまたま居合(いあ)わせた [ばかり] に、事件(じけん)に巻(ま)き込(こ)まれてしまった。

Hanzai no ba ni tama-tama v. i-awaseta [bakari] ni, jiken ni maki-komarete shimatta.

It was only because (I) just happened to be at the scene of the crime that (I) got dragged into the case.

2. Indicates a degree of things.

1) Similar to "hodo ほど" and "kurai/gurai くらい/ぐらい." Usually preceded by a number or quantity.

English approximation: "approximately"

A) 彼(かれ)は二(に)メートル ばかり もある大男(おおおとこ)です。

Kare wa $_{n.}$ ni-meetoru bakari mo aru oo-otoko desu.

He is a big man, at about two meters tall.

B) 旅行(りょこう)の費用(ひよう)は全部(ぜんぶ)で五十万円(ごじゅうまんえん) ばかり かかった。

Ryokoo no hiyoo wa zenbu de $_{n.}$ gojuu-man en bakari kakatta.

The total cost of the trip came to about five hundred thousand yen.

C) わたしは十日(とおか) ばかり 留守(るす)にします。

Watashi wa $_{n.}$ tooka bakari rusu ni shi-masu.

I will be away for about ten days.

2) Following a verb, shows that the action is/was about to be carried out.

English approximation: "just about to do (something)"

A) 食事(しょくじ)を作(つく)り終(おわ)って、もう食(た)べる ばかり のところに、電話(でんわ)がかかってきました。

Shokuji o tsukuri-owatte, moo $_{v.}$ taberu bakari no tokoro ni, denwa ga kakatte ki-mashita.

I had finished cooking the meal and was about to eat it when there was a phone call.

B) 雨(あめ)が降(ふ)り出(だ)さん ばかり の空模様(そらもよう)だ。

Ame ga $_{v.}$ furi-dasan bakari no sora moyoo da.

The sky looks like it's about to rain.

3) In the pattern "...ta bakari ～たばかり," to indicate that an action has/had just been completed.

English approximation: "have/has just done (something)"

A) わたしは習(なら)った ばかり の日本語(にほんご)を使(つか)ってみました。

Watashi wa v. naratta [bakari] no nihon-go o tsukatte mi-mashita.

I tried using Japanese that I had just learned.

B) さっき食(た)べた[ばかり]なのに、またすぐおなかがすいてしまった。

Sakki v. tabeta [bakari] na noni, mata sugu onaka ga suite shimatta.

Although I had just eaten a little while ago, I was hungry again right away.

3. In the pattern "bakari ka ばかりか." (also see p. 12 **4.**)

English approximation: "not only (something), but also (something)..."

A) 頭(あたま)[ばかり]か[のど]も痛(いた)い。

n. Atama [bakari] ka nodo mo itai.

Not only my head but my throat hurts, too.

B) あの生徒(せいと)は教授(きょうじゅ)にごまをする[ばかり]か、カンニングまでしていい点(てん)をとろうとするそうだ。

Ano seeto wa kyooju ni v. goma-o-suru [bakari] ka, kanningu made shite ii ten o toroo to suru soo da.

I hear that student not only butters up professors, but even cheats to get good grades.

4. In the patterns "... bakari de (wa) naku ... mo ～ばかりで(は)なく～も," "bakari ja naku ... mo ～ばかりじゃなく～も." (also see p. 12)

English approximation: "not only ... (a noun, an adjective, a verb) but also ... (a noun, an adjective, a verb)"

A) 男(おとこ)の子(こ)[ばかり]じゃなく、女(おんな)の子(こ)も大勢(おおぜい)いたよ。

n. Otoko no ko [bakari] ja naku, on-na no ko mo oozee ita yo.

There were not only boys but also many girls.

B) わたしは，日本語(にほんご) ばかり でなく、中国語(ちゅうごくご)も勉強(べんきょう)したい。

Watashi wa, n. Nihon-go bakari de naku, Chuugoku-go mo benkyoo-shitai.

I would like to study not only Japanese but also Chinese.

C) この手提(てさ)げは、デザインがいい ばかり でなく、値段(ねだん)も手(て)ごろだ。

Kono tesage wa, dezain ga adj ii bakari de naku, nedan mo tegoro da.

As for this bag, not only is its design nice, but the price is reasonable as well.

D) のどが渇(かわ)いた ばかり でなく、おなかもすいた。

Nodo ga v. kawaita bakari de naku, onaka mo suita.

Not only am I thirsty, but I'm also hungry.

5. In the pattern "bakashi ばかし," a variant of "bakari ばかり," used casually.

1) Indicates an approximate amount, often with the implication that it is not very much.

English approximation: "(only) about..."

A) わたしの財布(さいふ)のなかには五百円(ごひゃくえん) ばかし しかない。

Watashi no saifu no naka ni wa n. go-hyaku en bakashi shika nai.

There is only about five hundred yen in my wallet.

B) これ ばかし の貯金(ちょきん)では、旅行(りょこう)にも行(い)けない。

n. Kore bakashi no chokin de wa, ryokoo ni mo ike-nai.

With only about this much savings, (I) can't even go on a trip.

2) Indicates a limit.

English approximation: "only"

A) あの人は、一日中お酒 ばかし 飲んでいる。

Ano hito wa, ichi-nichi-juu $_{n.}$ osake bakashi nonde-iru.

That person is drinking only liquor all day.

B) そんなに甘いもの ばかし 食べていると、虫歯になるよ。

Son-na ni $_{n.\ ph.}$ amai mono bakashi tabete-iru to, mushiba ni naru yo.

If (you) keep eating only sweets like that, (you)'ll get cavities.

3) Shows that it has only been a short while after an action has been completed.

English approximation: "just"

A) 日本語のテストがあった ばかし なのに、次はフランス語のテストだ。

Nihon-go no tesuto ga $_{v.}$ atta bakashi na noni, tsugi wa furansu-go no tesuto da.

We've just had a Japanese test, but we have a French test next.

B) 今いけた ばかし の花よ。きれいでしょう。

Ima $_{v.}$ iketa bakashi no hana yo. Kiree deshoo.

These are the flowers that I just finished arranging. Aren't they beautiful?

DAKE だけ

1. Indicates a limit imposed upon something.

English approximation: “only” or “just”

A) 赤(あか)いりんご[だけ]三(みっ)つください。

Akai $_{n.}$ ringo [dake] mittsu kudasai.

Please give me three of the red apples only.

B) わたしは一人(ひとり)[だけ]取(と)り残(のこ)された。

Watashi wa $_{n.}$ hitori [dake] tori-nokosareta.

I was left all alone. (Only I was left.)

C) 人(ひと)は外見(がいけん)[だけ]ではわからない。

Hito wa $_{n.}$ gaiken [dake] de wa wakara-nai.

You can't tell a person just by his/her looks.

D) ここにあるのは古(ふる)い新聞(しんぶん)[だけ]です。

Koko ni aru no wa furui $_{n.}$ shinbun [dake] desu.

What's available here is only some old newspapers.

E) ここ[だけ]の話(はなし)ですが、わたしは南極探検(なんきょくたんけん)を計画(けいかく)しているんです。

$_{n.}$ Koko [dake] no hanashi desu ga, watashi wa nankyoku-tanken o keekaku-shite-iru-n desu.

This is just between you and me, but I'm planning an antarctic expedition.

2. Placed after the potential form of verbs “... ru ～る,” “... reru ～れる” and “...rareru ～られる,” refers to a degree of something, with the implication that that degree cannot be surpassed.

English approximation: “as much as ...”

A) わたしは歩(ある)ける[だけ]歩(ある)きました。

Watashi wa $_{v.}$ arukeru [dake] aruki-mashita.

I walked as much as I could.

B) 出来(でき)る [だけ] 助(たす)けてあげましょう。

v. Dekiru [dake] tasukete age-mashoo.

I'll try to help you as much as I can.

C) やれる [だけ] やってみようよ。

v. Yareru [dake] yatte miyoo yo.

Let's try to do as much as (we) can.

3. In the pattern "... ba ... dake ～ば～だけ."

English approximation: "the more (something), the ..."

A) 安(やす)ければ安(やす)い [だけ] いいです。

Yasukere ba adj. yasui [dake] ii desu.

The cheaper the better.

B) 早(はや)くすればする [だけ] 有利(ゆうり)だ。

Hayaku sure ba v. suru [dake] yuuri da.

The faster you do it, the more advantageous it is.

4. In the pattern "... dake de (ja) naku ... mo ～だけで(じゃ)なく～も."

English approximation: "not only ... but (also) ..."

A) ケーキ [だけ] でなく、アイスクリームも食(た)べましょうよ。

n. Keeki [dake] de naku, aisukuriimu mo tabe-mashoo yo.

Let's eat not only a cake, but also ice cream.

B) この部屋(へや)は広(ひろ)い [だけ] でなく、とても明(あか)るいね。

Kono heya wa adj. hiroi [dake] de naku, totemo akarui ne.

This room is not only spacious, but also very sunny.

C) この犬(いぬ)は、上手(じょうず)に泳(およ)ぐ [だけ] でなく芸(げい)もうまい。

Kono inu wa, joozu ni v. oyogu [dake] de naku gee mo umai.

This dog not only swims well, but also does tricks well.

DAKE-NI だけ-に Combination particle

A combination of the particles "dake だけ" and "ni に." Often takes the form "dake atte だけあって."

1. Expresses an opinion that a situation is appropriate and fulfills its expectations.

English approximation: "since/because ..., (as expected) ..."

A) よく勉強(べんきょう)した だけに、いい成績(せいせき)で合格(ごうかく)した。

Yoku $_{v.}$ benkyoo-shita dake ni, ii seeseki de gookaku-shita.

Since I studied hard, (as expected) I passed with good grades.

B) ここは有名(ゆうめい)な観光地(かんこうち) だけに、毎日(まいにち)たくさんの人(ひと)が訪(おとず)れる。

Koko wa yuumee na $_{n.}$ kankoo-chi dake ni, mainichi takusan no hito ga otozureru.

Since it's a famous tourist spot, (as expected) many people visit it every day.

C) ここは赤道(せきどう)に近(ちか)い だけに、すごく暑(あつ)いね。

Koko wa sekidoo ni $_{adj.}$ chikai dake ni, sugoku atsui ne.

Since this place is close to the equator, it's terribly hot, isn't it?

2. Indicates that something did not proceed as expected, with the implication that it was an unexpected surprise.

English approximation: "since (... was not expected) ..."

A) 彼(かれ)にはもう会(あ)えないだろうとあきらめていた だけに、電話(でんわ)がかかってきた時(とき)には、とてもうれしかった。

Kare ni wa moo ae-nai daroo to $_{v.}$ akiramete-ita dake ni, denwa ga kakatte-kita toki ni wa, totemo ureshikatta.

Since I had thought that I'd never be able to see him again, I was very happy when he called (unexpectedly).

B) ハリケーンの被害(ひがい)が大(おお)きかった[だけに]、その町(まち)の復興(ふっこう)ぶりには目(め)を見張(みは)るものがあった。

Harikeen no higai ga adj.ookikatta [dake ni], sono machi no fukkoo-buri ni wa me o miharu mono ga atta.

Since the damages caused by the hurricane were extensive, that town's rate of rebuilding was quite something to behold.

DANO だの

Used to list things successively, usually in a "... dano ... dano ～だの～ だの" pattern.

English approximation: similar in feeling to "things like (something) and (something)."

A) 紙屑(かみくず)[だの]空缶(あきかん)[だの]、道(みち)に散(ち)らかっている。

n.Kamikuzu [dano] n.akikan [dano], michi ni chirakatte-iru.

Things like scraps of paper and empty cans are scattered on the street.

B) 一人歩(ひとりある)きは危険(きけん)[だの]、地下鉄(ちかてつ)は恐(こわ)い[だの]、ニューヨークに引(ひ)っ越(こ)すと決(き)まったら友達(ともだち)から脅(おど)かされた。

Hitori aruki wa n.kiken [dano], chikatetsu wa adj.kowai [dano], Nyuuyooku ni hikkosu to kimattara tomodachi kara odokasareta.

When it was decided that I was to move to New York, my friends

scared me, saying things like "it's dangerous to walk alone" and "subways are frightening."

DATTE だって

1. Takes a special case and shows that it is really the same as other cases.

English approximation: in the sense of "even (something) is/does ..."

A) 子供(こども)[だって]それくらいわかります。

n. Kodomo [datte] sore kurai wakari-masu.

Even children can understand something like that.

B) 親友同士(しんゆうどうし)[だって]けんかすることもある。

n. Shinyuu-dooshi [datte] kenka-suru koto mo aru.

Even best friends quarrel sometimes.

C) 夏(なつ)[だって]肌寒(はださむ)い日(ひ)もある。

n. Natsu [datte] hada-zamui hi mo aru.

Even in the summer, there are chilly days.

2. Lists things in order to show that each thing is the same as the other, in a "... datte ... datte ～だって～だって" (or, variation: "... tatte ... tatte ～たって～たって") pattern. Note that for this usage, "datte だって" can also take the form "tatte たって."

English approximation: "whether it's (something) or (something) ..."

A) あした[だって]、あさって[だって]、構(かま)いませんよ。

n. Ashita [datte], n. asatte [datte], kamai-masen yo.

It's fine with me, whether it's tomorrow or the day after.

B) 大阪(おおさか)で買(か)っ[たって]、東京(とうきょう)で買(か)っ[たって]、値段(ねだん)は同(おな)じだよ。

Oosaka de v. kat 【tatte】, Tookyoo de v. kat 【tatte】, nedan wa onaji da yo.

It's the same price, whether you buy it in Osaka or Tokyo.

3. Follows an interrogative pronoun.

1) To qualify anything in its category as valid in the clause that follows.

English approximation: "anyone" "anytime" "anywhere" etc.

A) いつ【だって】見(み)られますよ。

n. Itsu 【datte】 mirare-masu yo.

You can see it anytime.

B) そんな物(もの)はどこに【だって】あるさ。

Son-na mono wa ph. doko ni 【datte】 aru sa.

That sort of thing can be found anywhere.

C) だれ【だって】それくらいわかるはずです。

n. Dare 【datte】 sore kurai wakaru hazu desu.

Anyone should be able to understand something like that.

2) In a negative sentence, to show that nothing in the group specified by the interrogative pronoun wants to be something or does something.

English approximation: "no one" "nothing" etc.

A) だれ【だって】貧乏(びんぼう)はいやだ。

n. Dare 【datte】 binboo wa iya da.

No one likes being poor. (literally: Everyone doesn't like being poor.)

B) どんな所(ところ)【だって】行きたくない。

Don-na n. tokoro 【datte】 iki-taku-nai.

No matter where it may be, (I) don't want to go.

C) そんなことは、いつ[だって]したくない。

Son-na koto wa, n. itsu [datte] shitaku-nai.

I never want to do something like that.

4. Placed at the end of a sentence, expresses surprise (and sometimes disapproval) after quoting something someone else has said.

English approximation: "he/she said that ..."

A) 僕はお金なんか借りていませんよ[だって]。忘れたのかしら。

cl. Boku wa okane nanka karite i-masen yo [datte]. Wasureta no kashira.

He said to me, "I haven't borrowed any money." I wonder if he forgot?

B) 今夜も彼とデートなの[だって]。よく飽きないわね、あの二人。

cl. Konya mo kare to deeto na no [datte]. Yoku aki-nai wa ne, ano futari.

She said, "I've got a date with him again tonight." They're not bored with each other, those two (i.e. it's a wonder that they're not).

DE で

FUNDAMENTALS OF "DE で"

1. Placed after a noun of location, indicates it is where an action takes/took place. It is static. Note that the particles "ni に" or "e へ" indicate the direction of the action. Compare the following:

A) 学校(がっこう)[で]勉強(べんきょう)する。

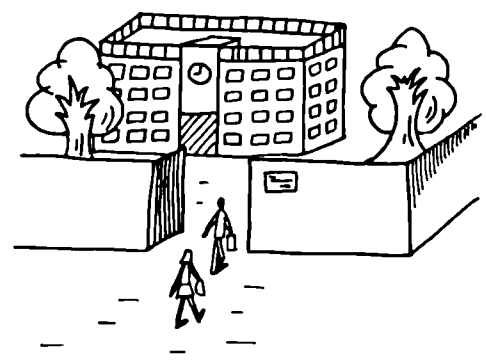
Gakkoo [de] benkyoo-suru.

(I) study at school.

B) 学校(がっこう)[に]行(い)く。

Gakkoo [ni] iku.

(I) go to school.



C) オフィス[で]電話(でんわ)をかける。

Ofiisu [de] denwa o kakeru.

(I) make a call at the office.

D) オフィス[に]電話(でんわ)をかける。

Ofiisu [ni] denwa o kakeru.

(I) telephone the office.

English approximation: "at" "in"

A) わたしは海(うみ)[で]泳(およ)ぎました。

Watashi wa n. umi [de] oyogi-mashita.

I swam in the ocean.

B) あの木(き)の下(した)[で]お弁当(べんとう)を食(た)べましょう。

Ano ki no n. shita [de] obentoo o tabe-mashoo.

Let's have lunch under that tree.

C) わたしは大学(だいがく)で日本語(にほんご)を勉強(べんきょう)しています。

Watashi wa n. daigaku de nihon-go o benkyoo-shite-i-masu.

I'm studying Japanese at college.

D) デパートで食事(しょくじ)をしてから、本屋(ほんや)で辞書(じしょ)を買(か)いました。

n. Depaato de shokuji o shite kara, n. hon-ya de jisho o kai-mashita.

After eating at the department store, I bought a dictionary at the bookstore.

2. Indicates the superlative.

English approximation: "in" "among"

A) 宮田(みやた)さんは、クラス中(じゅう)で一番速(いちばんはや)く走(はし)ります。

Miyata-san wa n. kurasu-juu de ichiban hayaku hashiri-masu.

Ms. Miyata is the fastest runner in our class.

B) この中(なか)でだれが猫(ねこ)の首(くび)に鈴(すず)を付(つ)けに行(い)くんだい？

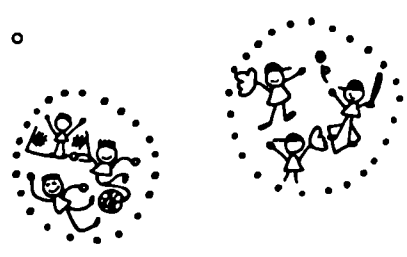
Kono n. naka de dare ga neko no kubi ni suzu o tsuke ni iku-n dai?

Among us, who's going to go hang a bell on the cat's neck?

3. In the pattern "... de mo ... de mo, ～でも ～でも," lists locations.

English approximation: "in/at (location) and in/at (location) ..."

A) ここでも、あそこでも、子供達(こどもたち)が遊(あそ)んでいる。



n. Koko de mo, n. asoko de mo, kodomo-tachi ga asonde-iru.

Here and over there children are playing.

B) 今年の夏は海[で]も山[で]も事故が続発した。

Kotoshi no natsu wa n. umi [de] mo n. yama [de] mo jiko ga zokuhatsu-shita.

This summer, accidents occurred one after another both at the ocean and in the mountains.

4. Indicates the time when an action or process happened or happens.

1) Shows the time period when something occurred/occurs, often found in "de wa では" and "de mo でも" patterns.

English approximation: "in" "at"

A) 一九四〇年代[で]は、こんな歌がはやったそうだ。

n. Sen-kyuuhyaku-yonjuu-nen-dai [de] wa, kon-na uta ga hayatta soo da.

In the 1940's, this sort of song was supposedly popular.

B) 今[で]も、その習慣はなお行われている。

n. Ima [de] mo, sono shuukan wa nao okonawarete-iru.

Even now (at present), that custom is still carried out.

2) Indicates the age of a person.

English approximation: "at"

A) 彼は六十歳[で]退職した。

Kare wa n. rokujus-sai [de] taishoku-shita.

He retired at age sixty.

B) 母は二十五歳[で]結婚した。

Haha wa n. nijuu-go-sai [de] kekkon-shita.

My mother got married at age twenty-five.

3) Imposes a time limit on an action or occurrence.

English approximation: "in (amount of time)"

A) この仕事(しごと)は二十分(にじゅっぷん)[で]出来(でき)ますか？

Kono shigoto wa n. nijup-pun [de] deki-masu ka?

Can you do this job in twenty minutes?

B) もう二週間(にしゅうかん)[で]夏休(なつやす)みになります。

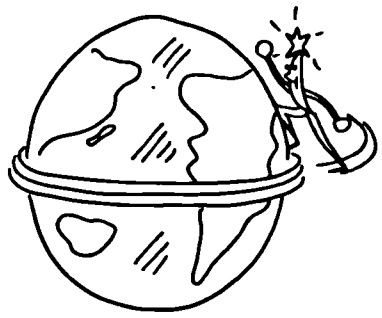
Moo n. ni-shuukan [de] natsu-yasumi ni nari-masu.

Summer vacation is coming in two weeks.

C) 光(ひかり)は一秒間(いちびょうかん)[で]地球(ちきゅう)を七回(ななまわ)り半(はん)する。

Hikari wa n. ichi-byookan [de] chikyuu o nana-mawari-han suru.

Light travels around the earth seven and a half times in one second.



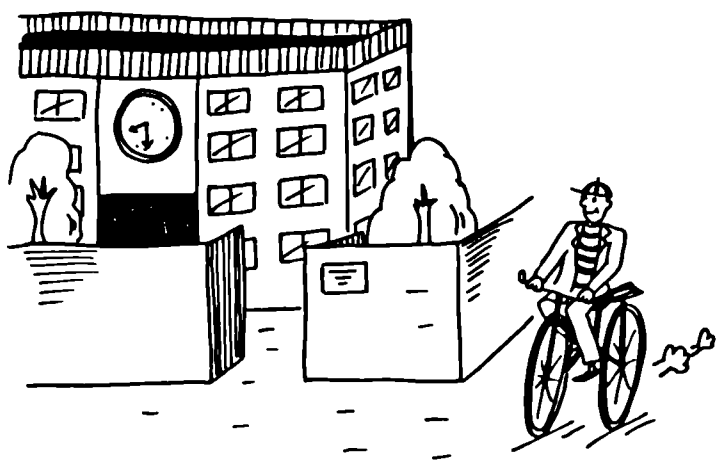
5. Indicates what method or tool is/was employed for an action.

English approximation: "do (something) by using (something)"

A) わたしは学校(がっこう)へ自転車(じてんしゃ)[で]通(かよ)っています。

Watashi wa gakkoo e n. jitensha [de] kayotte-i-masu.

I commute to school by bicycle.



わたしは飛行機(ひこうき)[で]ロンドンに行(い)ってから、船(ふね)[で]スペインに行(い)きました。

Watashi wa n. hikooki [de] rondon ni itte kara, n. fune [de] supein ni iki-mashita.

I went to London by plane, then went to Spain by boat.

C) わたしは父(ちち)と電話(でんわ)[で]話(はな)しました。

Watashi wa chichi to n. denwa [de] hanashi-mashita.

I talked with my father on (literally: by using) the phone.

D) 鉛筆(えんぴつ)[で]書(か)いてください。

n. Enpitsu [de] kaite kudasai.

Please write with a pencil.

E) 石(せっ)けん[で]よく手(て)を洗(あら)いなさいよ。

n. Sekken [de] yoku te o arai-nasai yo.

Wash your hands thoroughly with soap.

F) 彼(かれ)はいつもユーモア[で]みんなを笑(わら)わせます。

Kare wa itsumo n. yuumoa [de] min-na o warawase-masu.

He always makes everyone laugh with his sense of humor.

G) 日本語(にほんご)[で]話(はな)してください。

n. Nihon-go [de] hanashite kudasai.

Please speak in Japanese.

H) ガラス[で]指(ゆび)を少(すこ)し切(き)ってしまいました。

n. Garasu [de] yubi o sukoshi kitte shimai-mashita.

I cut my finger a little on glass.

6. Gives the price of something.

English approximation: "at" "for"

A) その本を二千円で買いました。

Sono hon o n. ni-sen en de kai-mashita.

I bought the book for two thousand yen.

B) ハワイへはいくらで行けますか？

Hawai e wa n. ikura de ike-masu ka?

How much would it cost for a trip to Hawaii?

7. Indicates time or quantity that makes a unit.

English approximation: "by" "for"

A) 僕は時間でアルバイトをしている。

Boku wa n. jikan de arubaito o shite-iru.

I'm working part time by the hour.

B) そのリンゴは二つで五百円です。

Sono ringo wa n. futatsu de go-hyaku en desu.

Those apples are two for five hundred yen.

C) わたし達のチームは一点差で勝った。

Watashi-tachi no chiimu wa n. it-ten-sa de katta.

Our team won the game by only one point.

8. Indicates the composition of an object.

English approximation: "from" "of"

A) これはプラスチックでできた箱です。

Kore wa n. purasuchikku de dekita hako desu.

This is a box made out of plastic.

B) それは粘土で作った器です。

Sore wa n. nendo [de] tsukutta utsuwa desu.

It's a vessel made of clay.

C) バターはミルク[で]作(つく)ります。

Bataa wa n. miruku [de] tsukuri-masu.

Butter is made from milk.

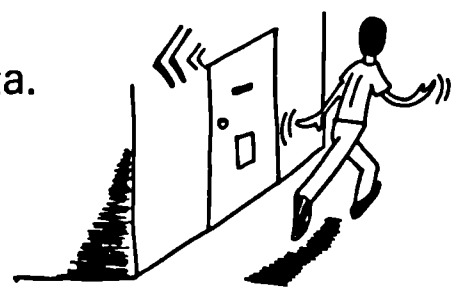
9. Indicates the manner of an action, or the condition/intention at the time of occurrence/action.

English approximation: "(in this manner) ..." "(with intention to) ..."

A) わたしは急(いそ)い[で]出(で)かけました。

Watashi wa v. isoi [de] dekake-mashita.

I left in a rush.



B) 彼(かれ)は夢中(むちゅう)[で]走(はし)った。

Kare wa n. muchuu [de] hashitta.

He ran frantically.

C) 僕(ぼく)はしかるつもり[で]言(い)ったのではない。

Boku wa shikaru n. tsumori [de] itta no de wa nai.

I didn't say it with the intention to scold (you).

10. Indicates a reason or motive for an action or occurrence.

English approximation: "due to ..." "owing to ..."

A) 彼(かれ)は不注意(ふちゅうい)[で]階段(かいだん)から落(お)ちた。

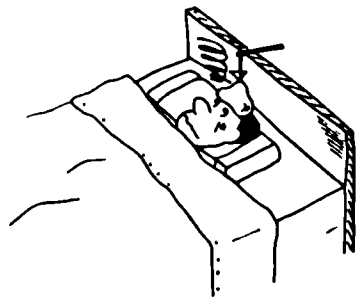
Kare wa n. fuchuui [de] kaidan kara ochita.

He fell down the stairs due to carelessness.

B) 僕(ぼく)は今日風邪(きょうかぜ)[で]学校(がっこう)を休(やす)んだ。

Boku wa kyoo n. kaze [de] gakkoo o yasunda.

Today, I was absent from school due to a cold.



C) 寒さ[で]手が凍えそうだ。

n. Samusa [de] te ga kogoe soo da.

My hands are almost frozen from the cold.

D) このデザインの流行[で]店は大繁盛だ。

Kono dezain no n. ryuukoo [de] mise wa dai-hanjoo da.

Due to the popularity of this design, the store is doing very well.

11. Indicates the source of information, basis of a condition.

English approximation: "by" "from" "on" "according to"

A) 新聞の天気予報[で]見ると、今日は曇だそうだ。

Shinbun no n. tenki-yohoo [de] miru to, kyoo wa kumori da soo da.

According to the weather forecast in the paper, it will be cloudy today.

B) あなたの時計[で]は今何時ですか？

Anata no n. tokee [de] wa ima nan-ji desu ka?

What time is it now according to your watch?

C) 彼がひどく悩んでいるのは、顔色[で]わかる。

Kare ga hidoku nayande-iru no wa, n. kao-iro [de] wakaru.

I can tell from his face that he is very troubled.

12. Indicates the basis of evaluation.

English approximation: "depending on" "according to"

A) みかんの値段は大きさ[で]違います。

Mikan no nedan wa n. ookisa [de] chigai-masu.

The price of oranges varies depending on their size.

B) 土地の値段は広さと便利さ[で]変ります。

Tochi no nedan wa n. hirosa to benrisa [de] kawari-masu.

The price of land changes according to the size and location.

13. Shows which party is/was responsible for an action.

English approximation: in the sense of "(something) is/was done by (something)."

A) それは家族[で]決めたことです。

Sore wa n. kazoku [de] kimeta koto desu.

It was a decision made by (my) family.

B) その新聞は学校[で]発行された。

Sono shinbun wa n. gakkoo [de] hakkoo-sareta.

That newspaper was published by the school.

DEMO でも

1. Presents an extreme example to make the point that since something applies to such a case, it therefore certainly applies to more normal cases.

English approximation: "even"

A) 先生[でも]わからないでしょう。

n. Sensee [demo] wakara-nai deshoo.

Even the teacher probably won't be able to understand it.

B) ちょっと[でも]見落としがあっては大変だ。

n. Chotto [demo] mi-otoshi ga atte wa taihen da.

If (we) miss even one thing, there'll be grave consequences.

2. In the pattern "don-na ... demo どんな～でも."

English approximation: "no matter what/how (something) ..." or "regardless of the fact that..."

A) あの先生はどんな難しい問題[でも]解ける。

Ano sensee wa don-na muzukashii n. mondai [demo] tokeru.

That teacher can solve any problem, no matter how difficult it may be.

B) わたしはどんな食べ物[でも]一度は食べてみたいと思います。

Watashi wa don-na n. tabemono [demo] ichido wa tabete mi-tai to omoi-masu.

Regardless of the type of food, I'd like to try eating it once.

3. After an interrogative pronoun, indicates an all-inclusiveness.

English approximation: "whatever" "whenever " etc.

A) どこ[でも]いいから座ってください。

n. Doko [demo] ii kara suwatte kudasai.

Please sit wherever you like. (more literally: "Please sit; anywhere is fine.")

B) なん[でも]好きなものを注文していいよ。

n. Nan [demo] suki na mono o chuumon-shite ii yo.

You can order whatever you like.

4. Used in casually mentioning something as a suggestion.

English approximation: in the sense of "something like ..."

B) 帰りにコーヒー[でも]飲みに行かない？

Kaeri ni n. koohii [demo] nomi ni ika-nai?

Why don't we go have coffee or something on the way home?

B) ここ[でも]よければお話(はなし)しますが。

n. Koko [demo] yokere ba ohanashi-shi-masu ga.

If it's all right to talk somewhere like here, I will.

5. To express wishful thinking; sometimes in a "semete ... demo ... せめて～でも～" pattern.

English approximation: "if only there were (something), even just a little bit of it ..."

A) せめて少(すこ)しだけ[でも]貯金(ちょきん)があったらなあ。

Semete sukoshi n. dake [demo] chokin ga attara naa.

If only I had even just a little bit of savings ...

B) 腰(こし)をおろす所(ところ)[でも]あったらいいのになあ。

Koshi o orosu n. tokoro [demo] attara ii no ni naa.

If only there were some place I could sit down ...

6. Often in a "manzara ... demo まんざら～でも" pattern and/or a double negative, to indicate that there are other attributes to something, besides the obvious.

English approximation: examples are "not all bad" and "not unthinkable."

A) あの人(ひと)の言(い)うことは、まんざらうそ[でも]ない。

Ano hito no yuu koto wa, manzara n. uso [demo] nai.

What that person says isn't all untrue.

B) この計画(けいかく)は、実現不可能(じつげんふかのう)なわけ[でも]ない。

Kono keekaku wa, jitsugen fukanoo na n. wake [demo] nai.

This plan isn't impossible to carry out.

DOKORO どころ

Takes an extreme case of a certain situation and emphatically negates its possibility.

English approximation: "not possible to do, (for example)"

A) こう人が多くては、ゆっくり絵を観賞する どころ ではない。

Koo hito ga ooku te wa, yukkuri e o v. kanshoo-suru dokoro de wa nai.

With this many people, it's out of the question to, say, enjoy looking at the paintings.

A) 今とても忙しくて、休暇 どころ の騒ぎではない。

Ima totemo isogashiku te, n. kyuuka dokoro no sawagi de wa nai.

I'm so busy now that it's not even plausible to, for example, take a vacation.

DOKOROKA どころか

Serves to negate the clause it modifies, in order to emphasize the point made by the clause that follows.

English approximation: the nuance is "never mind (something)..."

A) あの子は勉強する どころか、一日中遊んでばかりいる。

Ano ko wa v. benkyoo-suru dokoroka, ichi-nichi-juu asonde bakari iru.

Never mind studying, all that child does is play all day.

B) お湯 どころか 水さえ出ない。

n. Oyu dokoroka mizu sae de-nai.

Never mind hot water, there's not even cold water.

DOMO ども

Placed after a verb.

English approximation: "(even) though"

A) 親友といえ ども (親友といっても)、彼女の本当の気持ちはわからない。

Shinyuu to v. ie domo (shinyuu to itte mo), kanojo no hontoo no kimochi wa wakara-nai.

Though we are best friends, I don't know how she really feels.

B) 行け ども 行け ども (行っても行っても)、砂ばかりの大砂漠だった。

v. Ike domo v. ike domo (itte mo itte mo), suna bakari no dai-sabaku datta.

Though we went on and on, we saw nothing but the sand in the vast desert.

E へ

FUNDAMENTALS OF "E へ"

First, note that the character "へ," used as a particle, is read "e," even though it is normally read "he." Placed after a noun, it indicates that the noun is the destination, direction or the goal of the action.

Some frequently used verbs that follow "e へ" are:

ageru 上げる(to lift)

aruku 歩く(to walk)

dekakeru 出かける(to go out)

denwa o kakeru 電話をかける(to telephone)

denwa o suru 電話をする(to telephone)

deru 出る(to exit)

hairu 入る(to enter)

ireru 入れる(to put in)

iku 行く(to go)

kaeru 帰る(to return)

kaku 書く(to write)

kuru 来る(to come)

modoru 戻る(to come back)

mukau 向かう(to head for)

oku 置く(to place)

okuru 贈る(to present)

okuru 送る(to send)

ryokoo-suru 旅行する(to travel)

shuppatsu-suru 出発する(to depart)

taoreru 倒れる(to fall down)

tegami o kaku 手紙を書く(to write a letter)

tenkin-suru 転勤する(to be transferred)

tsuku 着く(to arrive)

It is interchangeable with the particle "ni に" in most cases. Note, however, that this rule does not apply when the particle "e へ" is followed

by the particle “no の”; “e へ” then cannot be replaced by “ni に.”

Examples:

A) わたしは母(はは)[へ]プレゼントを送(おく)りました。

Watashi wa haha [e] purezento o okuri-mashita.

I sent my mother a present.

わたしは母(はは)[に]プレゼントを送(おく)りました。

Watashi wa haha [ni] purezento o okuri-mashita.

I sent my mother a present.

B) これは母(はは)[へ]のプレゼントです。

Kore wa haha [e] no purezento desu.

This is a present for my mother.

Wrong:

これは母(はは)[~~に~~]のプレゼントです。

Kore wa haha [~~ni~~] no purezento desu.

1. Shows the direction where an action is headed.

English approximation: “to” “toward”

A) わたしは大阪(おおさか)[へ]行(い)きます。

Watashi wa n. oosaka [e] iki-masu.

I'm going to Osaka.

B) 彼(かれ)は駅(えき)の方(ほう)[へ]歩(ある)いて行(い)きました。

Kare wa eki no n. hoo [e] aruite iki-mashita.

He walked toward the station.

C) 北野(きたの)さんはヨーロッパ[へ]出張中(しゅっちょうちゅう)です。

Kitano-san wa n. yooroppa [e] shucchoo-chuu desu.

Mr. Kitano is currently on a business trip to Europe.

D) 地震(じしん)で五階建(ごかいだ)ての建物(たてもの)が後(うしろ)[へ]傾(かたむ)いた。

Jishin de go-kai-date no tatemono ga n. ushiro [e] katamuita.

Because of the earthquake, the five-storied building leaned toward the back.

2. Shows the ending point or destination of an action.

English approximation: "at"

A) わたしは今空港(いまくうこう)[へ]着(つ)きました。

Watashi wa ima n. kuukoo [e] tsuki-mashita.

I arrived at the airport just now.

B) いつ日本(にほん)[へ]お帰(かえ)りになりましたか？

Itsu n. nihon [e] okaeri ni nari-mashita ka?

When did you come back to Japan?

C) 僕(ぼく)は道(みち)に迷(まよ)ったあげく、三十分(さんじゅっぷん)も遅(おく)れて会議場(かいぎじょう)[へ]たどり着(つ)いた。

Boku wa michi ni mayotta ageku, sanjup-pun mo okurete n. kaigi-joo [e] tadori-tsuita.

After getting lost, I arrived at the meeting place thirty minutes late.

3. Indicates the person or thing to which an action is directed.

English approximation: "to" "for"

A) これはあなた[へ]のプレゼントです。

Kore wa n. anata [e] no purezento desu.

This is a present for you.

B) これは先生(せんせい)[へ]のお手紙(てがみ)だからお渡(わた)ししてね。

Kore wa n. sensee [e] no otegami dakara owatashi-shite ne.

This is a letter to the teacher, so please hand it to (him/her).

4. In the pattern "... tokoro e ～ところへ," describes a situation that exists when an action takes place.

English approximation: "(this was the situation) when (something else happened)."

A) 宿題(しゅくだい)が終(お)わったところ[へ]友達(ともだち)が遊(あそ)びに来(き)た。

Shukudai ga owatta $_{n.}$ tokoro [e] tomodachi ga asobi ni kita.

I had just finished my homework when my friend came over.

B) 傘(かさ)を持(も)たずに出(で)かけたところ[へ]、雨(あめ)が降(ふ)ってきた。

Kasa o motazu ni dekaketa $_{n.}$ tokoro [e], ame ga futte-kita.

I had just left without bringing an umbrella when it started to rain.

GA が

FUNDAMENTALS OF "GA が"

A major function of the particle "ga が" is to emphasize the subject by following directly after it. However, other particles such as "wa は" in particular (see p. 235) also serve the same purpose. Deciding when to use which may be one of the most difficult factors in constructing Japanese sentences; in fact, even native speakers sometimes have to stop and think about the choices. The following are some basic guidelines to help you with this task.

I. When to use "ga が" after the subject or topic:

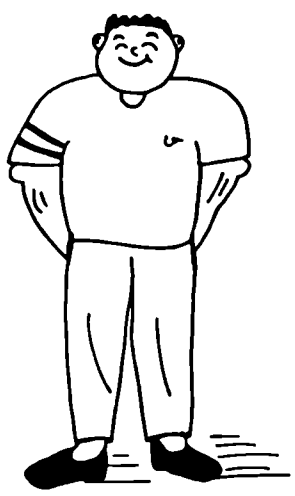
1. "Ga が" appears in sentences that indicate the existence of something,

in the sense of "there is/are/was/were ..." Note that in Japanese, you must differentiate between living things and non-living things by using separate verbs that both mean "to be in a place." "Iru いる" is for the former group, and "aru ある" is for the latter.

A) 人(ひと)[が]いる（います)。

n. Hito [ga] iru (i-masu).

There is a person.



B) 本(ほん)[が]ある(あります)。

n. Hon [ga] aru (ari-masu).

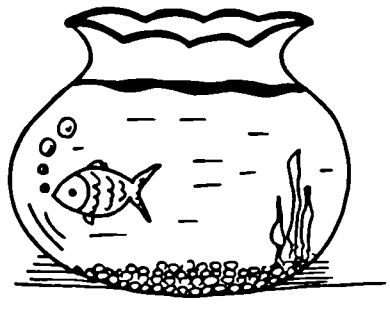
There is a book.

Even in talking about the same thing, you must use different verbs depending on whether or not it is animate:

C) 魚(さかな)[が]いる（います)。

n. Sakana [ga] iru (i-masu).

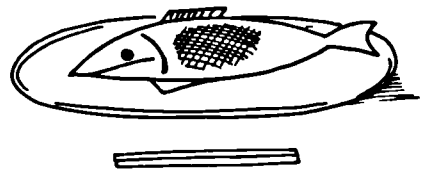
"There is a fish." (animate)



D) 魚(さかな)[が]ある（あります)。

n. Sakana [ga] aru (ari-masu).

"There is a fish." (inanimate)



2. To express desire, need, ability or opinion, "ga" follows the topic.

A) わたしはアイスクリーム[が]食(た)べたい。

Watashi wa n. aisukuriimu [ga] tabe-tai.

I want to eat ice cream.

B) わたしは英語[が]話せます。

Watashi wa n. eego [ga] hanase-masu.

I can speak English.

C) 彼女は音楽[が]好きです。

Kanojo wa n. ongaku [ga] suki desu.

She likes music.

3. "Ga が" follows an interrogative pronoun or noun phrase.

A) だれ[が]来ましたか？

n. Dare [ga] ki-mashita ka?

Who came?

B) あなたはどんな食べ物[が]好きですか？

Anata wa n. ph. don-na tabemono [ga] suki desu ka?

What kind of food do you like?

C) 何時[が]いいですか？

n. Nan-ji [ga] ii desu ka?

What time is good (for you)?

4. "Ga が" often follows a noun that is modified by an adjective.

A) 波[が]高い。

n. Nami [ga] takai.

The waves are high.

B) わたしは気分[が]いいです。

Watashi wa n. kibun [ga] ii desu.

I feel good.

C) 部屋[が]暑い。

n. Heya [ga] atsui.

The room is hot.

5. In describing one of the five senses, "ga が" often accompanies the noun.

A) いいにおい[が]する。

Ii n. nioi [ga] suru.

(It) smells good.

B) 甘(あま)い味(あじ)[が]する。

Amai n. aji [ga] suru.

(It) tastes sweet.

6. Sentences with intransitive verbs usually have subjects that are followed by "ga が."

A) 戸(と)[が]閉(し)まる。

n. To [ga] shimaru.

The door closes.

B) 電気(でんき)[が]消(き)えた。

n. Denki [ga] kieta.

The lights went off.

C) 月(つき)[が]出(で)た。

n. Tsuki [ga] deta.

The moon has come out.

II. Other uses of "ga が" include the following:

1. Functions like a conjunction after "sore ga (ne) それが(ね)" and "tokoro ga (ne) ところが(ね)," with a feeling of unexpected surprise.

A) それ[が]、何(なん)とものすごく混(こ)んでいたんだ。

Sore [ga], nanto monosugoku konde ita-n da.

But actually, it was really crowded.

B) 僕(ぼく)はもう諦(あきら)めていた。ところ[が]ね、見(み)つかったんだよ、何と。

Boku wa moo akiramete ita. Tokoro [ga] ne, mitsukatta-n da yo, nan to.

I had already given up. But, it was actually found!

2. After a verb, in the patterns "ga gotoku がごとく" and "ga mama ni がままに."

English approximation: with "gotoku ごとく" = "as if", with "mama ni ままに" = "exactly as (something)"

A) 戦争記念碑(せんそうきねんひ)は、人間(にんげん)の争(あらそ)うさがを悲(かな)しむ[が]ごとく立(た)っていた。

Sensoo-kinenhi wa, ningen no arasou saga o $_{v.}$ kanashimu [ga] gotoku tatte ita.

The war memorial stood, as if grieving over the nature of human-kind to fight against each other.

B) 彼(かれ)は、母(はは)のすすめる[が]ままに技師(ぎし)になった。

Kare wa, haha no $_{v.}$ susumeru [ga] mama ni, gishi ni natta.

Following his mother's advice exactly, he became an engineer.

3. Makes an introductory clause before the main point.

English approximation: "as" in the patterns "as for...," "as you've already heard ...," etc.

A) その点(てん)です[が]、もっと詳(くわ)しく説明(せつめい)してください。

Sono ten $_{c.}$ desu [ga], motto kuwashiku setsumee-shite kudasai.

As for that point, please explain it in more detail.

B) すでに申し上げました**が**、この計画の成功は間違いないものと思います。

Sude ni v. mooshi-age-mashita **ga**, kono keekaku no seekoo wa machigai-nai mono to omoi-masu.

As I've said before, I think that this plan will undoubtedly succeed.

4. Functions like a conjunction.

English approximation: "but" in the sense of "despite doing (something)" or "although."

A) 僕はベストをつくした**が**、だめだった。

Boku wa besuto o v. tsukushita **ga**, dame datta.

I did the best I could, but I failed.

B) きのうお電話しました**が**、お留守でした。

Kinoo v. odenwa-shi-mashita **ga**, orusu deshita.

I called yesterday, but (you/he/she) was/were not home.

C) 僕は一晩中考えた**が**、名案は浮かばなかった。

Boku wa hitoban-juu v. kangaeta **ga**, mee-an wa ukaba-nakatta.

I pondered all night, but couldn't come up with any great ideas.

5. In the patterns "... u ga ～うが" and "... mai ga ～まいが."

English approximation: "no matter (something)" or "whether (you) do (something) or not, it doesn't matter..."

A) 僕がどこへ行こう**が**、ずっと友達でいよう。

Boku ga doko e v. ikoo **ga**, zutto tomodachi de iyoo.

No matter where I go, let's stay friends.

B) 走(はし)ろう [が]、走(はし)るまい [が]、間(ま)に合(あ)わないだろう。

v. Hashiroo [ga], v. hashiru-mai [ga], mani-awa-nai daroo.

(You) won't be on time whether (you) run or not.

6. Indicates wishful thinking in presenting an imaginary, desirable situation that is the opposite of the current, actual situation. Similar to "noni のに." (See p.167)

English approximation: "(if ...), can/would do..., (but ...)"

A) 雪(ゆき)が降(ふ)ればいい [が] なあ。

Yuki ga fure ba adj. ii [ga] naa.

It would be good if it were to snow (i.e. I wish it would snow).

B) 宝(たから)くじが当(あた)ったらうれしい [が] なあ。

Takarakuji ga atattara adj. ureshii [ga] naa.

I'd be happy if I were to win the lottery (i.e. I wish I could win the lottery).

7. At the end of the sentence, serves to soften a request or opinion. Takes a straightforward statement that would sound too direct and transforms it into a more indirect approach.

English approximation: somewhat akin to the English phrase "I'm wondering if I could..." or "(this is what I think), but..."

A) 社長(しゃちょう)さんにお目(め)にかかりたいんです [が]。

Shachoo-san ni v. omeni-kakari-tai-n desu [ga].

I'd like to meet the president ...

(compare: "shachoo-san ni omeni-kakari-tai-n desu" by itself tends to sound too forward and impolite.)

B) もう一日休暇(いちにちきゅうか)をとりたいんです [が]。

Moo ichi-nichi kyuuka o $_{v.}$ tori-tai-n desu [ga].

I'd like to take one more day of vacation ...

C) わたしは、このままでいいと思(おも)うんです[が]。

Watashi wa, kono-mama de ii to $_{v.}$ omou-n desu [ga].

I think it would be fine to leave it the way it is ...

8. Placed at the end of a sentence; exclamatory. Modifies nouns, and is said scornfully and disapprovingly. Men's language. Not translatable.

A) このうそつきめ[が]！

Kono $_{n.}$ usotsuki-me [ga]!

You liar!

B) このガキめ[が]！

Kono $_{n.}$ gaki-me [ga]!

You little brat! ("Gaki" is slang for "little boy," but it often has negative implications.)

9. Expresses uncertainty or puzzlement.

English approximation: the nuance is "I'd thought (I)'d done (something) but..."

A) 確(たし)かにここに置(お)いておいたんです[が]。

Tashika ni koko ni oite-oita-n $_{c.}$ desu [ga].

I had definitely put it here, but ... (i.e. "I thought I had put it here ...")

B) 電話(でんわ)がかかってくるはずなんだ[が]。どうしたんだろう。

Denwa ga kakatte kuru hazu na-n $_{c.}$ da [ga]. Dooshita-n daroo.

I'm supposed to get a phone call (i.e. he/she is supposed to call me) .... I wonder what happened.

GA-NA(GA-NAA)　が-な(が-なあ)　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ga が" and "na(a) な(あ)." Expresses wishful thinking, which is rather unlikely to happen in reality.

English approximation: "I hope ..., though ...."

A) 雨(あめ)が降(ふ)り出(だ)した。あしたのピクニックはいいお天気(てんき)だといい がな(がなあ)。

Ame ga furi-dashita. Ashita no pikunikku wa ii otenki da to adj. ii ga na(ga naa).

It has started to rain. I hope it's going to be a nice day for the picnic tomorrow, though.

B) きのうも彼女(かのじょ)は電話(でんわ)をかけてこなかった。今日(きょう)はかけてくると思(おも)う がな(がなあ)。

Kinoo mo kanojo wa denwa o kakete konakatta. Kyoo wa kakete kuru to v. omou ga na(ga naa).

She didn't call again yesterday. I think she will call today, though.

GATERA　がてら

Indicates that while one action is being carried out, another related action is also carried out; much like "killing two birds with one stone."

English approximation: "while doing ..., on the way, do ... "

A) 子供(こども)を学校(がっこう)に送(おく)り がてら、買(か)い物(もの)に行(い)ってこよう。

Kodomo o gakkoo ni v. okuri gatera, kaimono ni itte-koyoo.

While I'm out taking the kids to school, I'll go shopping (on the

way).

B) お寺にお参りし[がてら]、叔父さんのうちに寄ってきた。

Otera ni $_{v.}$omairi-shi [gatera], ojisan no uchi ni yotte-kita.

While I was out worshiping at the temple, I went to visit my uncle (on the way).

HODO ほど

1. After a quantity, indicates that the amount is an approximation. Interchangeable with the particle "kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)." (See p.79)

English approximation: "about" "approximately"

A) この仕事はあと一週間[ほど]あれば出来上がります。

Kono shigoto wa ato $_{n.}$is-shuukan [hodo] are ba dekiagari-masu.

This job will be done in about a week.

B) あと一カ月[ほど]で夏休みになる。

Ato $_{n.}$ik-ka-getsu [hodo] de natsu-yasumi ni naru.

It'll be summer vacation in about a month.

2. Takes a specific situation and evaluates its extent.

English approximation: "to the extent that ..."

A) 彼は、彼女にふられて、みているのが気の毒な[ほど]しょげている。

Kare wa, kanojo ni furarete, mite-iru no ga $_{adj.}$kinodoku na [hodo] shogete-iru.

She broke up with him, and he's depressed to the extent that just seeing him makes you feel bad (for him).

B) わたしはコンクールに優勝(ゆうしょう)して、涙(なみだ)がでる [ほど] うれしかった。

Watashi wa konkuuru ni yuushoo-shite, namida ga $_{v.}$deru [hodo] ureshikatta.

Winning the competition, I was so happy I cried.

3. Followed by a negation, establishes a standard for comparison.

English approximation: "(not) as much/little as ..."

A) 今年(ことし)の梅雨(つゆ)は、いつも [ほど] 雨(あめ)が多(おお)くない。

Kotoshi no tsuyu wa, $_{n.}$itsumo [hodo] ame ga ooku-nai.

During this year's rainy season, there hasn't been as much rain as usual.

B) 夏休(なつやす)み [ほど] 待(ま)ち遠(どお)しいものはない。

$_{n.}$Natsu-yasumi [hodo] machi-dooshii mono wa nai.

There's nothing that (I) look forward to more than summer vacation.

4. Often in the patterns "... suru hodo ～するほど" and "... ba ... hodo ～ば～ほど, " shows that as one thing increases, the other increases as well.

English approximation: "the more ..., the more ...."

A) なんでも、練習(れんしゅう)すればする [ほど] 上手(じょうず)になる。

Na-n demo, renshuu sure ba $_{v.}$suru [hodo] joozu ni naru.

With everything, the more (you) practice, the better (you) will get.

B) 骨董品(こっとうひん)は、古(ふる)ければ古(ふる)い [ほど] 価値(かち)がある。

Kottoohin wa, furukere ba $_{adj.}$furui [hodo] kachi ga aru.

As for antiques, the older it is, the more value it has.

HOKA　ほか

Followed by a negative, it serves to exclude all possibilities other than the one mentioned.

English approximation: The implication is "nothing except for ..."; the meaning is similar to "only." Interchangeable with "shika しか." (See p.182)

A) あの人達(ひとたち)は、もうそこまでいってしまっていては、離婚(りこん)する[ほか]仕方(しかた)がない。

Ano hito-tachi wa, moo soko made itte-shimatte ite wa, v. rikon-suru [hoka] shikata ga nai.

For those people, since they've already gone that far, there's nothing left to do but to get a divorce.

B) こんなひどい雨(あめ)では、今日(きょう)の試合(しあい)は中止(ちゅうし)する[ほか]ないね。

Kon-na-ni hidoi ame de wa, kyoo no shiai wa v. chuushi-suru [hoka] nai ne.

Since it's raining so heavily, we can do nothing but cancel today's match.

I　い

Used mostly in men's language. Not translatable.

1. At the end of a sentence, serves to emphasize it.

A) そのおもちゃ、僕(ぼく)のだ[い]。

Sono omocha, boku no c. da [i].

That toy is mine!

B) わしも年(とし)をとったわ[い]。

Washi mo toshi o totta $_{p.}$ wa [i].

(Oh,) I've grown old (sigh)!

C) いかは食べたか[い]?

Ika wa tabeta $_{p.}$ ka [i]?

Did you eat the squid?

2. Reinforces the interrogative.

A) 今晩(こんばん)マージャンやらないか[い]?

Konban maajan yara-nai $_{p.}$ ka [i]?

Why don't we play mahjong tonight?

B) 今(いま)すぐ来(こ)られないか[い]?

Ima sugu korare-nai $_{p.}$ ka [i]?

Can't you come right now?

KA か

1. Expresses uncertainty of the topic it marks.

English approximation: "if" "whether"

A) 日本(にほん)に行(い)くのは、いつになる[か]全(まった)くわからない。

Nihon ni iku no wa, itsu ni $_{v.}$ naru [ka] mattaku wakara-nai.

I have no idea when I'll be going to Japan. (literally: As for going to Japan, when it will be, I have no idea.)

B) この河(かわ)は、見(み)ただけでは、海(うみ)なんだ[か]河(かわ)なんだ[か]わからないくらい大(おお)きいね。

Kono kawa wa, mita dake de wa, umi nan c. da [ka] kawa nan c. da [ka] wakara-nai kurai ookii ne.

This river is so big, you can't tell if it's an ocean or a river just by looking (at it). (literally: As for this river, just by looking (at it), whether it's an ocean or a river, one can't tell—that's the extent of its size, isn't it?)

2. Expresses a conjecture with an implied sense of doubt.

English approximation: "perhaps because of ..."

A) もうこんな時間(じかん)か。外(そと)が明(あか)るいせい[か]気(き)が付(つ)かなかった。

Moo kon-na jikan ka. Soto ga akarui n. see [ka] ki ga tsuka-nakatta.

It's so late already. Maybe it's because it's light outside, I hadn't noticed.

B) ゆうべは飲(の)みすぎたの[か]、今朝(けさ)は頭(あたま)が痛(いた)い。

Yuube wa nomi-sugita p. no [ka], kesa wa atama ga itai.

Perhaps I had too much to drink last night; this morning I have a headache.

3. In the pattern "... ka ... ka ～か～か," lists a number of choices.

English approximation: "... or ..."

A) 右(みぎ)の[か]左(ひだり)の[か]、早(はや)く決(き)めてよ。

Migi n. no [ka] hidari n. no [ka], hayaku kimete yo.

The one on the right or the one on the left? Make up your mind quickly!

B) 行(い)くの[か]行(い)かないの[か]、どっちなの？

Iku p. no [ka] ika-nai p. no [ka], docchi na no?

Are you going or not going, which is it?

4. In the pattern "... ka ... ～か～," gives an approximate number.

English approximation: "(number) or (number)"

A) 二度(にど)[か]三度君(さんどきみ)のうちに電話(でんわ)したけど、留守(るす)だった。

n. Nido [ka] sando kimi no uchi ni denwa-shita kedo, rusu datta.

I called you at home two or three times, but no one answered.

B) わたし達(たち)は三日(みっか)[か]四日(よっか)旅行(りょこう)に出(で)かけます。

Watashi-tachi wa n. mikka [ka] yokka ryokoo ni dekake-masu.

We're going on a trip for three or four days.

C) そのキャンデー、一(ひと)つ[か]二(ふた)つわたしにもちょうだい。

Sono kyandee, n. hitotsu [ka] futatsu watashi ni mo choodai.

Give me one or two of those candies, too.

5. Placed at the end of a sentence.

1) Makes the sentence into an interrogative or a rhetorical question. Not translatable.

A) きのうはどうして来(こ)なかったのです[か]?

Kinoo wa dooshite konakatta no c. desu [ka]?

Why didn't you come yesterday?

B) 戦争(せんそう)を避(さ)けるのは不可能(ふかのう)なのだろう[か]?

Sensoo o sakeru no wa fukanoo na no c. daroo [ka]?

Is it impossible to avoid war?

C) どちら様(さま)でいらっしゃいます[か]?

Dochira-sama de v. irasshai-masu [ka]?

May I ask who this is?

2) Indicates a confirmation. Not translatable.

A) わかった[か]。もう二度(にど)とするんじゃないよ。

v. Wakatta [ka]. Moo nido to suru-n ja nai yo.

Do you understand? Don't ever do this again.

B) 本当(ほんとう)にあした来てくれます[か]？

Hontoo ni ashita v. kite-kure-masu [ka]?

Are you really going to come (on my behalf) tomorrow?

3) Rhetorical question. Not translatable.

A) どうしてそんなことが信(しん)じられるだろう[か]。

Dooshite son-na koto ga shinji-rareru c. daroo [ka].

How can (I) believe something like that?

B) こんなことになるとは、だれが想像(そうぞう)しただろう[か]。

Kon-na koto ni naru to wa, dare ga soozoo-shita c. daroo [ka].

Who would have imagined that this would happen? (literally: As for this happening, who would have imagined?)

C) こんな夜中(よなか)に人(ひと)が訪(たず)ねてくることがあろう[か]。

Kon-na yonaka ni hito ga tazunete kuru koto ga v. aroo [ka].

Is it possible that someone has come to visit at such a late hour?

4) Expresses a rebuttal or objection to a previous sentence. Not translatable.

A) そんなことってあるんでしょう[か]。

Son-na koto-tte aru-n c. deshoo [ka].

Can something like that really happen?

B) 本当(ほんとう)に大丈夫(だいじょうぶ)でしょう[か]。

Hontoo ni daijoobu c. deshoo [ka].

Is it really going to be all right?

5) Adds a critical, scolding tone. Not translatable.

A) こんな時間(じかん)まで遊(あそ)んでくる人(ひと)がありますか。

Kon-na jikan made asonde-kuru hito ga $_{v.}$ ari-masu ka.

You're out playing so late! (literally: "Is there anyone who'd stay out playing until this hour? ")

B) あんなに頼(たの)んだのに、この手紙(てがみ)出(だ)すのを忘(わす)れたのか。

An-na ni tanonda no ni, kono tegami dasu no o wasureta $_{p.}$ no ka.

I asked you so many times, and still you forgot to mail this letter!

6) Often in the pattern "... de wa/ja nai ka ～ではないか/じゃないか," asks a rhetorical question for emphasis.

English approximation: "wasn't it so that ..."

A) 明(あか)るいうちに帰(かえ)っておいでといったではないか。

Akarui uchi ni kaette oide to itta de wa $_{v.}$ nai ka.

Didn't I tell you to come home while it was still light outside?

B) さかだち、きのうはできたじゃないか。

Sakadachi, kinoo wa dekita ja $_{v.}$ nai ka.

Weren't you able to do a handstand yesterday?

7) Makes a casual suggestion.

English approximation: "why don't we ..." " do you want to ..." " let's ..."

A) 帰(かえ)りに一杯(いっぱい)やろうか。

Kaeri ni ippai $_{v.}$ yaroo ka.

Do you want to have a drink on our way home?

B) もう一度(いちどたし)確かめてみようじゃないか。

Moo ichido tashikamete miyoo ja $_{v.}$ nai ka.

Why don't we make sure one more time?

8) Often in a "... tara doo ka ～たらどうか" pattern, makes a roundabout, softened command.

English approximation: "why don't you do ..."

A) そんなに行きたいのなら、行ってみたらどう[か]。

Son-na ni iki-tai no nara, itte-mitara adv.doo [ka].

If you want to go that badly, why don't you go?

B) 独りで心配しているより、いろんな人に聞いてみたらどう[か]。

Hitori de shinpai-shite-iru yori, iron-na hito ni kiite-mitara adv. doo [ka].

Instead of worrying all by yourself, why don't you ask lots of people (for advice)?

9) As a sort of self-utterance, often with a reminiscent or some emotional overtone. Not translatable.

A) そう[か]。とうとう合格した[か]。よくやったな。

adv.Soo [ka]. Tootoo v.gookaku-shita [ka]. Yoku yatta na.

Really, (you) finally passed (the test). (You) did well.

B) なあんだ、影[か]。幽霊かと思った。

Naan da, n.kage [ka]. Yuuree ka to omotta.

Oh, it's only a shadow. I thought it was a ghost.

KA-I かーい Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ka か" and "i い." Placed at the end of a sentence to indicate that it is an interrogative, or to express that it opposes the statement that was just previously made by another party.

Emphatic. Not translatable.

A) そりゃ、うそじゃない[かい]？

Sorya, uso ja $_{v.}$ nai [ka i]?

Isn't that a lie?

B) こんないい天気(てんき)に、雨(あめ)なんか降(ふ)るもん[かい]。

Kon-na ii tenki ni, ame nan ka furu $_{n.}$ mon [ka i].

When it's this nice out, there's no way it's going to rain.

C) 怪談(かいだん)？　そんなもん信(しん)じる[かい]。

Kaidan? Son-na mon $_{v.}$ shinjiru [ka i].

Ghost stories? I'd never believe in something like that!

KA-NA(KA-NAA)　か-な(か-なあ)　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ka か" and "na な" or "na(naa) な(なあ)."

1. Casually expresses doubt, with a very light exclamatory tone.

English approximation: "(I) wonder ...?"

A) 大学入試(だいがくにゅうし)、今年(ことし)こそはうまくいく[かな(かなあ)]。

Daigaku nyuushi, kotoshi koso wa $_{v.}$ umaku-iku [ka na(ka naa)].

I wonder if maybe college entrance examinations will finally go well this year?

B) どうして一人(ひとり)で出(で)かけたの[かな(かなあ)]。

Dooshite hitori de dekaketa $_{p.}$ no [ka na(ka naa)].

I wonder why (he/she) went out alone?

2. Used in making a suggestion to oneself.

English approximation: "(I) think/(I) will do ..."

A) コーヒーでもいれよう [かな(かなあ)]。

Koohii demo v. ireyoo [ka na(ka naa)].

I think I'm going to make some coffee ...

B) そろそろ帰(かえ)ろう [かな]。

Soro-soro v. kaeroo [ka na].

I think I'm going to go home soon.

3. In the pattern "... nai kana ～ないかな," indicates wishful thinking.

English approximation: "I wish (it) would ..."

A) 早(はや)く春(はる)にならない [かな(かなあ)]。

Hayaku haru ni v. nara-nai [ka na(ka naa)].

I wish spring would come soon.

B) お父(とう)さん早(はや)く出張(しゅっちょう)から帰(かえ)ってこない [かな(かなあ)]。

Otoosan hayaku shucchoo kara kaette v. ko-nai [ka na(ka naa)].

I wish Dad would come home soon from his business trip.

KARA から

FUNDAMENTALS OF "KARA から"

In general, you can understand the function of "kara から" by identifying the part of speech of the word immediately preceding it. When "kara から" is placed after a noun or a nominal it usually means "from," whereas after an adjective or a verb and a copula, "kara から" usually indicates reason or

cause.

1. Placed after a noun or a nominal.

1) After a pronoun, interrogative pronoun, a person's name or social position, indicates that an action or a deed is directed from that person.

English approximation: "from"

A) わたしはその話(はなし)を先生(せんせい)[から]聞(き)きました。

Watashi wa sono hanashi o n. sensee [kara] kiki-mashita.

I heard that story from my teacher.

B) 僕(ぼく)は彼女(かのじょ)[から]ラヴレターをもらった。

Boku wa n. kanojo [kara] raburetaa o moratta.

I received a love letter from her.

C) その本(ほん)をだれ[から]借(か)りましたか？

Sono hon o n. dare [kara] kari-mashita ka?

From whom did you borrow the book?

D) わたしは先生(せんせい)[から]褒(ほ)められてうれしかった。

Watashi wa n. sensee [kara] homerarete ureshikatta.

I was happy that my teacher gave me a compliment.

E) あなた[から]どうぞお話(はな)しください。

n. Anata [kara] doozo ohanashi kudasai.

Please, if you could start talking first. (literally: (Starting) with you, please tell us your story.)

F) わたしも早く親 **から** 独立したいんです。

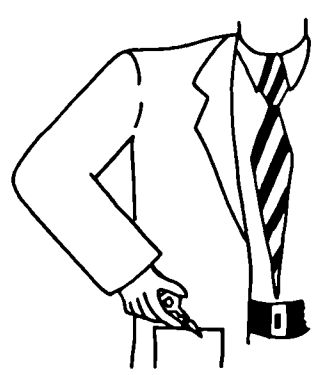
Watashi mo hayaku $_{n.}$ **oya** **kara** **dokuritsu shi-tai-n desu.**

I, too, would like to become independent from my parents soon.

2) Placed after a noun, showing a place/space, indicates that something starts/started at that place.

English approximation: "from" "through" "out of" "in"

A) 彼はポケット **から** 車の鍵を取り出した。



Kare wa $_{n.}$ **poketto** **kara** **kuruma no kagi o tori-dashita.**

He took his car keys out of his pocket.

B) 泥棒は窓 **から** 入ったらしい。

Doroboo wa $_{n.}$ **mado** **kara** **haitta rashii.**

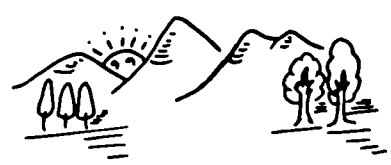
It looks like the robber got into the house through the window.

C) 木 **から** りんごが落ちてきた。

$_{n.}$ **Ki** **kara** **ringo ga ochite kita.**

An apple fell from the tree.

D) 太陽は東 **から** 昇ります。



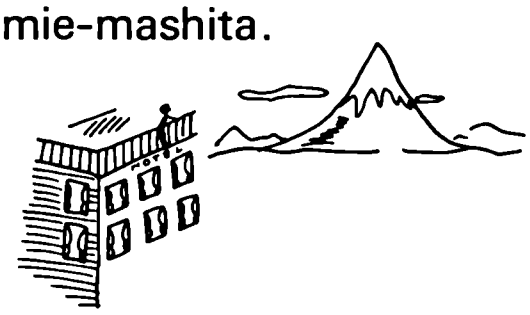
Taiyoo wa $_{n.}$ **higashi** **kara** **nobori-masu.**

The sun rises in the east.

E) ホテルの屋上[から]富士山が見えました。

Hoteru no n. okujoo [kara] Fujisan ga mie-mashita.

I saw Mt. Fuji from the roof top of the hotel.



F) ステンドグラス[から]夕日がさし込んでいる。

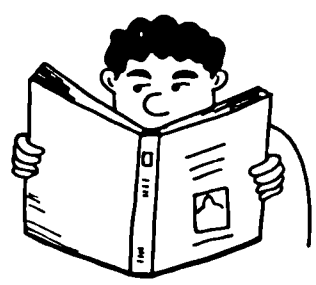
n. Sutendogurasu [kara] yuuhi ga sashi-konde-iru.

The rays of the setting sun are shining through the stained glass.

G) わたしはその知識を本[から]得ました。

Watashi wa sono chishiki o n. hon [kara] e-mashita.

I obtained that knowledge from a book.



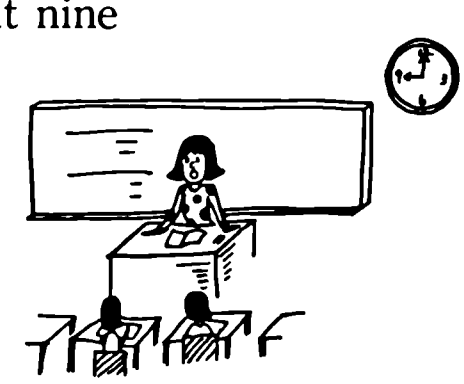
3) After a time word, indicates that something begins/began at that moment.

English approximation: "from" "at" "since"

A) 日本語の授業は、朝九時[から]始まります。

Nihon-go no jugyoo wa, asa n. ku-ji [kara] hajimari-masu.

The Japanese language class begins at nine o'clock in the morning.



B) 来週[から]地下鉄が値上げになる。

n. Raishuu [kara] chikatetsu ga ne-age ni naru.

From next week, the subway fare will go up.

C) わたしは、忙しくて、きのうの夜[から]ずっと寝ていません。

Watashi wa, isogashikute, ph. kinoo no yoru [kara] zutto nete i-masen.

I've been so busy that I haven't slept at all since last night.

D) 七夕は、昔[から]日本に伝わっている行事です。

Tanabata wa n. mukashi [kara] nihon ni tsutawatte-iru gyooji desu.

The Tanabata festival is a traditional event observed since olden times in Japan.

E) わたしは、日本に来て[から]もう二年になります。

Watashi wa, nihon ni g. kite [kara] moo ni-nen ni nari-masu.

Two years have already passed since I came to Japan.

F) 祖父が亡くなって[から]五年たちました。

Sofu ga g. nakunatte [kara] go-nen tachi-mashita.

It's been five years since my grandfather passed away.

4) In the pattern "... kara ... made ～から～まで," shows a range/span of space or time.

English approximation: "from/to" "between"

A) この幼稚園には、二歳[から]四歳までの子供達がいます。

Kono yoochien ni wa, n. ni-sai [kara] yon-sai made no kodomo-tachi ga i-masu.

There are children between the ages of two and four at this kindergarten.

B) 三時[から]四時までの間に来てください。

n. San-ji [kara] yo-ji made no aida ni kite kudasai.

Please come over between three and four o'clock.

C) わたしは、その記事を隅[から]隅まで読みました。

Watashi wa, sono kiji o n. sumi [kara] sumi made yomi-mashita.

I've read the article from the beginning to the end. (literally: from one corner to the other)

D) レストランといっても、ピン[から]きりまであります。

Resutoran to itte mo, n. pin [kara] kiri made ari-masu.

When it comes to restaurants, there's a wide range of them. (literally: from the first to the last)

E) 夕食を食べて[から]寝るまでに四時間ある。

Yuushoku o g. tabete [kara] neru made ni yo-jikan aru.

After dinner, I'll have four hours before I go to bed.

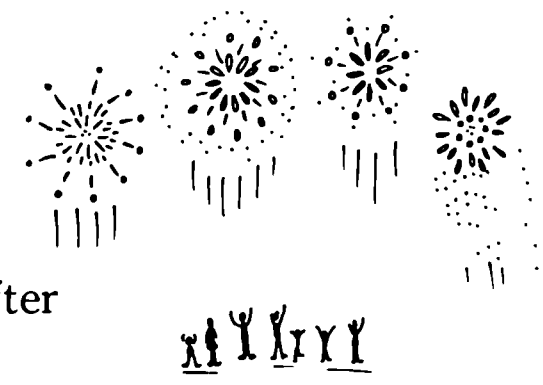
5) In the pattern "... kara ... e ～から～へ," the particle "kara から" is placed between repeated words, to indicate that the same action occurs one after another in succession.

English approximation: "one after another"

A) 花火が、次[から]次へと打ち上げられた。

Hanabi ga, n. tsugi [kara] tsugi e to uchi-agerareta.

Fireworks were shot up into the sky one after another. (literally: from next to the next)



B) 大波(おおなみ)が、次(つぎ)[から]次(つぎ)へと押(お)し寄(よ)せてきた。

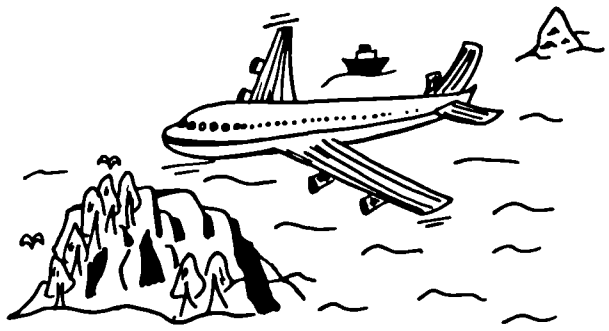
Oo-nami ga n. tsugi [kara] tsugi e to oshi-yosete kita.

One after another, great waves came rolling in.

C) わたし達(たち)は飛行機(ひこうき)で島(しま)[から]島(しま)へと飛(と)んだ。

Watashi-tachi wa hikooki de n. shima [kara] shima e to tonda.

We flew by plane from one island to another.



6) Indicates the composition of something. Interchangeable with the particle "de で."

English approximation: "from" "of" "out of"

A) 刃物(はもの)は鋼鉄(こうてつ)[から]作(つく)られます。

Hamono wa n. kootetsu [kara] tsukurare-masu.

Cutlery is made of steel.

B) パンは小麦粉(こむぎこ)[から]作(つく)ります。

Pan wa n. komugi-ko [kara] tsukuri-masu.

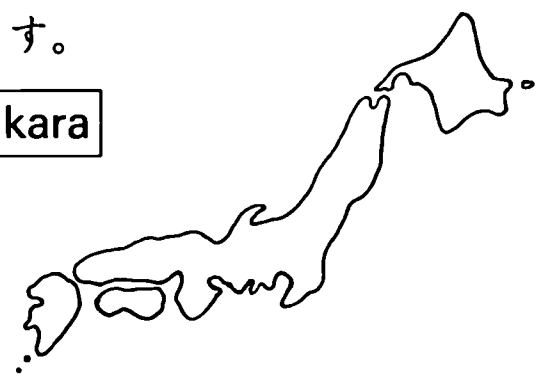
(We) make bread out of flour.

C) 本(ほん)は紙(かみ)[から]できています。

Hon wa n. kami [kara] dekite i-masu.

Books are made of paper.

D) 日本(にほん)は四(よっ)つの大(おお)きい島(しま)[から]なっています。



Nihon wa yottsu no ookii n. shima [kara] natte i-masu.

Japan consists of four big islands.

E) この国(くに)の経済(けいざい)は、貿易(ぼうえき)による収入(しゅうにゅう)[から]成(な)り立(た)っている。

Kono kuni no keezai wa, booeki ni yoru n. shuunyuu [kara] nari-tatte-iru.

The economy of this country is based on its trade income.

7) Placed after a noun, indicates an approximate amount/number.

English approximation: "as many as" "as much as" "no less than"

A) 百台(ひゃくだい)[から]の大型(おおがた)トラックが並(なら)んでいる。

n. Hyaku-dai [kara] no oogata torakku ga narande-iru.

More than one hundred big trucks are lined up.

B) 千人(せんにん)[から]の観光客(かんこうきゃく)が、毎日(まいにち)ここを訪(おとず)れる。

n. Sen-nin [kara] no kankoo-kyaku ga, mainichi koko o otozure-ru.

As many as one thousand tourists visit this place every day.

2. Placed after an abstract noun, an adjective or a verb.

1) Indicates a cause or a reason for an action/attitude that is described in the predicate clause. This inverted structure makes the sentence

emphatic.

English approximation: "as" "so" "since" "due to" "for" "because" "considering" "seeing"

A) お魚(さかな)が安(やす)かった[から]たくさん買(か)いました。

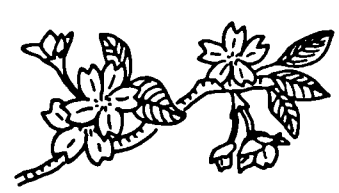
Osakana ga adj.yasukatta [kara] takusan kai-mashita.

Because I found the fish inexpensive, I bought lots of them.

B) 今日(きょう)はいいお天気(てんき)だ[から]、桜(さくら)は満開(まんかい)になるだろう。

Kyoo wa ii otenki c.da [kara], sakura wa mankai ni naru daroo.

Since the weather is very nice today, cherry blossoms will probably be in full bloom.



C) わたしはブロッコリは嫌(きら)いだ[から]、絶対(ぜったい)に食(た)べない。

Watashi wa burokkori wa kirai c.da [kara], zettai ni tabe-nai.

Because I don't like broccoli, I never eat it.

D) 日本語(にほんご)が上手(じょうず)になりたい[から]、一生懸命勉強(いっしょうけんめいべんきょう)します。

Nihon-go ga joozu ni v.nari-tai [kara], isshoo-kenmee benkyoo-shi-masu.

Since I want to be good at Japanese, I'll work hard.

E) 君(きみ)に友達(ともだち)が出来(でき)ないのは、うちにばかりいる[から]だよ。

Kimi ni tomodachi ga deki-nai no wa, uchi ni bakari v.iru [kara] da yo.

The reason why you can't make friends is that you stay home most of the time.

F) 僕が乗り過ごしたのは、君が教えてくれなかった[から]だぞ。

Boku ga nori-sugoshita no wa, kimi ga $_{v.}$oshiete-kure-nakatta [kara] da zo.

The reason why I missed my stop was that you didn't tell me (where to get off).

G) 彼は、妻との不和[から]、別居した。

Kare wa tsuma to no $_{n.}$fuwa [kara], bekkyo-shita.

Due to the fact that he didn't get along with his wife, they separated.

H) 彼は、高校の成績[から]、奨学金をもらうことになった。

Kare wa, kookoo no $_{n.}$seeseki [kara], shoogakukin o morau koto ni natta.

Because of his (excellent) grades in high school, he is to be granted a scholarship.

2) Placed after an abstract noun, indicates one's judgment/viewpoint.

English approximation: "from a viewpoint of" "judging from" "by" "according to"

A) あなたの眼[から]見れば、この仕事は簡単でしょう。

Anata no $_{n.}$me [kara] mire ba, kono shigoto wa kantan deshoo.

From your viewpoint, this task may seem to be easy.

B) この手紙の内容[から]判断すると、彼は課長に昇進するらしい。

Kono tegami no $_{n.}$naiyoo [kara] handan-suru to, kare wa kachoo ni shooshin suru rashii.

Judging from the contents of this letter, it seems that he will be promoted to manager. (literally: section chief)

C) 医学的見地[から]すれば、彼の研究はノーベル賞にも値する。

Igaku-teki n. kenchi [kara] sure ba, kare no kenkyuu wa nooberu-shoo ni mo atai suru.

From a medical point of view, his research is worth the Nobel Prize.

3) Placed after an abstract noun of emotion, indicates that such an emotion results in the action/state described in the predicate clause.

English approximation: "from" "out of" "due to"

A) わたしはうれしさ[から]跳び上がった。

Watashi wa n. ureshisa [kara] tobi-agatta.

I jumped for joy.

B) 僕は、工藤君とちょっとした言い合い[から]けんかしてしまった。

Boku wa, kudoo-kun to chotto shita n. ii-ai [kara] kenka-shite shimatta.

I ended up having a fight with Kudo over something that arose out of a minor argument.

C) 彼は責任感[から]辞職した。

Kare wa n. sekinin-kan [kara] jishoku-shita.

He resigned from his office out of a sense of responsibility.

3. In the pattern "... kara to itte ～からといって," introduces a restriction or a warning.

English approximation: "even though"

A) お小遣いをもらった[から]といって、使い過ぎると、すぐなくなるよ。

Okozukai o v. moratta [kara] to itte, tsukai-sugiru to, sugu

nakunaru yo.

Even though you've received an allowance, if you spend it too fast, it will soon be gone.

B) 安い[から]といって、たくさん買ってはいけません。

adj. Yasui [kara] to itte, takusan katte wa ike-masen.

Even though they may be a bargain, don't buy too many at a time.

C) 慣れたところだ[から]といって、一人で歩くのは危険です。

Nareta tokoro c. da [kara] to itte, hitori de aruku no wa kiken desu.

Even though you are familiar with the area, it is dangerous to walk around alone.

4. In the pattern "... kara ni wa ～からには," expresses a determination or a resolution.

English approximation: "since" "now that"

A) これだけ勉強した[から]には、きっと合格して見せるぞ。

Kore dake v. benkyoo shita [kara] ni wa, kitto gookaku-shite miseru zo.

Now that I've studied this hard, I will pass the entrance exam without fail!

B) 外国へ行く[から]には、そこの文化をよく知らなければならない。

Gaikoku e v. iku [kara] ni wa, soko no bunka o yoku shira-nakere-ba-nara-nai.

Now that you are going to a foreign country, you must got to know its culture very well.

C) この会社に入社した[から]には、一生懸命頑張ろう。

Kono kaisha ni v. nyuusha-shita [kara] ni wa, isshoo-kenmee

ganbaroo.

Now that I've been accepted by this company, I will do my best.

5. In the pattern "... kara ni ～からに."

English approximation: "just by doing ..."

A) 彼女(かのじょ)は見(み)る **から** に優(やさ)しそうな人(ひと)ですね。

Kanojo wa $_{v.}$ miru **kara** ni yasashi-soo na hito desu ne.

Just by looking at her, you can tell that she's probably a very kind person.

B) それは聞(き)く **から** に恐(こわ)い話(はなし)だ。

Sore wa $_{v.}$ kiku **kara** ni kowai hanashi da.

Just by listening to it, the story sends a chill up my spine.

KARA-SHITE から-して Combination particle

A combination of the particles "kara から" and "shite して."

1. Cites one characteristic of something/someone in order to make an emphatic statement about the whole thing/person.

English approximation: "starting with ..."

A) あの男(おとこ)の人(ひと)は顔(かお)つき **からして** ちょっと変(へん)だ。

Ano otoko no hito wa $_{n.}$ kaotsuki **kara shite** chotto hen da.

Starting with his face, he is a little strange.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)は持(も)ち物(もの) **からして** ぜいたくだ。

Kanojo wa $_{n.}$ mochimono **kara shite** zeetaku da.

Starting with her possessions, she is extravagant.

2. A more emphatic form of "kara から" used in the sense of "because/

since"; similar to "node ので."

English approximation: "consequently"

A) 今年(ことし)の収支(しゅうし)は赤字(あかじ)である[からして]、来年(らいねん)はなんとか黒字(くろじ)にしよう。

Kotoshi no shuushi wa akaji c. de-aru [kara shite], rainen wa nantoka kuroji ni shiyoo.

Our balance sheet is in the red this year; consequently, let's try to somehow come out on top next year.

B) そういううわさだ[からして]、あの二人(ふたり)は近々(ちかぢか)結婚(けっこん)するだろう。

Soo-yuu uwasa c. da [kara shite], ano futari wa chikajika kekkon-suru daroo.

Since that sort of rumor is going around, consequently, it's likely that those two will get married soon.

KASHIRA かしら

Found in women's language.

1. Following an interrogative pronoun, poses a question.

English approximation: "(I) wonder ..."

A) だれ[かしら]、今頃戸(いまごろと)をたたくのは。

n. Dare [kashira], imagoro to o tataku no wa.

I wonder who is knocking on my door at this hour.

B) 確(たし)かにここに置(お)いたはずだけど、ないわ。どこ[かしら]。

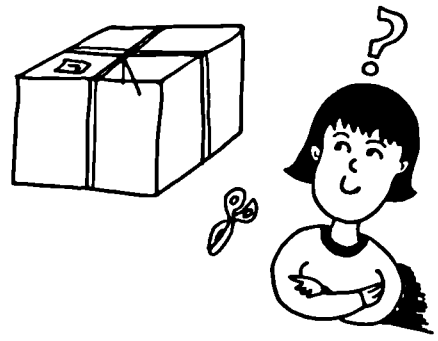
Tashika ni koko ni oita hazu da kedo, nai wa. n. Doko [kashira].

I thought I had definitely put it here, but it's not here. I wonder where it could be?

C) 大(おお)きな包(つつみ)ね。なに かしら 。

Ookina tsutsumi ne. $_{n.}$ Nani kashira .

That's a big package. I wonder what it is?



2. Casually softens a question or a sense of doubt addressed to oneself or another party. Not translatable.

A) この本(ほん)を買(か)ったの、いつだった かしら 。

Kono hon o katta no, itsu $_{c.}$ datta kashira .

When was it that I bought this book?

B) わたし、そんなこと言(い)った かしら 。覚(おぼ)えていないけど。

Watashi, son-na koto $_{v.}$ itta kashira . Oboete-i-nai kedo.

Did I say something like that? I don't remember it.

3. Softens an interrogative sentence. Not translatable.

A) 今度(こんど)はいついらっしゃいます かしら 。

Kondo wa itsu $_{v.}$ irasshai-masu kashira .

When will (you) be coming by again?

B) 今日(きょう)店(みせ)は開(あ)いている かしら 。

Kyoo mise wa $_{v.}$ aite-iru kashira .

I wonder, is the store open today?

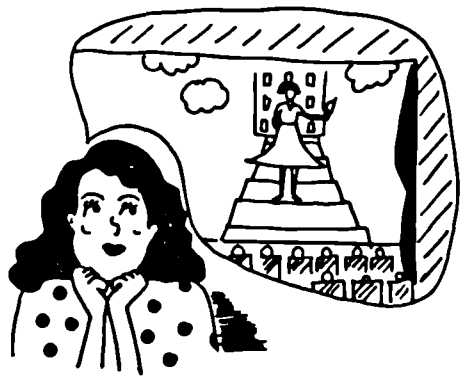
4. Makes a casual suggestion to oneself or another party.

English approximation: "should (I/we) do ..."

A) 今晩映画(こんばんえいが)に行(い)こう かしら 。

Konban eega ni $_{v.}$ ikoo kashira .

Should I go to the movies tonight?



B) ケーキを買って帰ろう [かしら]。

Keeki o katte v. kaeroo [kashira].

Should I buy a cake on the way home?

5. Following a negation:

1) Indicates wishful thinking or softens a statement asking someone for a favor.

English approximation: "I wish ..." "could (you) do ..."

A) 早く合格通知が来ない [かしら]。

Hayaku gookaku-tsuuchi ga v. ko-nai [kashira].

I wish the acceptance letter would arrive soon.

B) 今すぐ来てくれない [かしら]。

Ima sugu v. kite kure-nai [kashira].

Could you come right away?

2) Expresses concern over an uncertain or potentially negative situation.

English approximation: "I wonder ..."

A) 今出かけても、十時の汽車に間に合う [かしら]。

Ima dekake te mo, juu-ji no kisha ni v. mani-au [kashira].

Even if you were to leave now, I wonder if you could make it in time to catch the ten o'clock train.

B) そのスーツケース、重すぎない [かしら]。

Sono suutsu-keesu, v. omo-sugi-nai [kashira].

I wonder if that suitcase isn't too heavy.

KE け

Colloquial. Usually placed at the end of the sentence after the copula "da だ," which is the informal form of "desu です," to form patterns such as "dakke だっけ" and "dattakke だったっけ."

1. Used in reminiscing about a past event.

English approximation: "((I) remember)"

A) 小(ちい)さいとき、よく木登(きのぼ)りをしたもの(もん)だっ[け]。

Chiisai toki, yoku ki-nobori o shita mono (mo-n) c. da-k[ke].

When (I) was little, (I) used to climb trees all the time, (I remember).

B) そういえば、そんな所(ところ)へ行(い)ったっ[け]ねえ。

Soo ie ba, son-na tokoro e v. itta-k[ke] nee.

That's right, we did go somewhere like that, (I remember) (didn't we).

2. In an interrogative, actively solicits an answer from the party addressed.

English approximation: "when is/was it ...?" "what is/was it ...?" etc.

A) いつのことだったっ[け]、君(きみ)と音楽会(おんがくかい)に行(い)ったのは。

Itsu no koto c. datta-k[ke], kimi to ongak-kai ni itta no wa.

When was it now, that I went with you to the concert?

B) あの人(ひと)のところの電話番号(でんわばんごう)、何番(なんばん)だっ[け]。

Ano hito no tokoro no denwa-bangoo, nan-ban c. da-k[ke].

That person's phone number, what is it now?

KEREDOMO (KEREDO, KEDO, KEDOMO) けれども (けれど、けど、けども)

Colloquial forms: "keredo けれど," "kedo けど," and "kedomo けども."

1. A conjunctive particle.

1) After one statement, functions as an adversative conjunction leading into the next clause/phrase.

English approximation: "even though" "but"

A) この料理(りょうり)はおいしい けれども、作(つく)るのに手間(てま)がかかる。

Kono ryoori wa adj.oishii keredomo, tsukuru no ni tema ga kakaru.

Even though this dish is delicious, it's a hassle to make.

B) ちょっと地味(じみ)だ けれども、今夜(こんや)のパーティーにはこれを着(き)て行(い)こう。

Chotto jimi c.da keredomo, kon-ya no paatii ni wa kore o kite ikoo.

Even though it's a bit subdued, I'll wear this to the party tonight.

2) Following an apologetic remark, connects it to the main point that follows.

English approximation: "though" "but"

A) これ、ほんの少(すこ)しです けれども、召(め)し上(あが)ってください。

Kore, hon no sukoshi c.desu keredomo, meshi-agatte kudasai.

Though there's only a little bit here, please have it (to eat).

B) 突然(とつぜん)です けれども、会社(かいしゃ)を辞(や)めさせていただきます。

Totsuzen c.desu keredomo, kaisha o yamesasete itada-

kimasu.

I know it's sudden, but I wish to quit the company.

3) Simply connects two unrelated statements.

English approximation: (like a comma)

A) 犬(いぬ)がほえている[けれども]、だれか外(そと)にいるんじゃない？

Inu ga v. hoete-iru [keredomo], dare ka soto ni iru-n ja nai?

The dog's barking, isn't there someone out there?

B) この地方(ちほう)は寒(さむ)いと聞(き)いた[けれども]、本当(ほんとう)に毎日(まいにち)冷(ひ)え込(こ)むね。

Kono chihoo wa samui to v. kiita [keredomo], hontoo ni mainichi hie-komu ne.

I had heard that it was cold in this region, and it's truly quite chilly every day.

2. At the end of a sentence or clause.

1) Expresses wishful thinking; a hope that the situation at hand will be reversed.

English approximation: "(if ...), but..."

A) もう少(すこ)し日本語(にほんご)がよくわかるといいのだ[けれども]。

Moo sukoshi Nihon-go ga yoku wakaru to ii no c. da [keredomo].

It would be better if I could understand Japanese a little more, but ....

B) もう少(すこ)しお金(かね)があれば、あのステレオが買(か)えるのだ[けれども]。

Moo sukoshi okane ga are ba, ano sutereo ga kaeru no c. da [keredomo].

If I had a bit more money, I'd be able to buy that stereo, but ....

2) Often in the pattern "doose ... keredomo どうせ～けれども," gives the sentence an overtone of hopelessness, cynicism, or scorn. Not translatable.

A) 走(はし)ったってどうせ間(ま)に合(あ)わない けれども。

Hashitta-tte doose v. mani-awa-nai keredomo.

Even if (I) were to run, there's no way (I) would make it on time.

B) こんな安物(やすもの)、買(か)ってもどうせすぐこわれるだろう けれども。

Kon-na yasumono, katte mo doose sugu kowareru c. daroo keredomo.

This is so cheap, even if I were to buy it, it would surely break right away.

3) Used in making an indirect suggestion or statement.

English approximation: "(excuse me, but)"

A) 十時(じゅうじ)の汽車(きしゃ)でしたね。そろそろ出(で)かける時間(じかん)です けれども。

Juu-ji no kisha deshita ne. Soro-soro dekakeru jikan c. desu keredomo.

Your train is at ten, right? (Excuse me, but) I think it's about time to leave.

B) ぼつぼつ講義(こうぎ)が始(はじ)まります けれども。

Botsu-botsu koogi ga v. hajimari-masu keredomo.

(Excuse me, but) the lecture should be starting pretty soon.

3. A conjunction which is different from the usage of the above particle "keredomo けれども." Placed after a complete sentence:

1) Introduces another statement that conflicts with it.

English approximation: "however"

A) 日本語は難しい。けれども、一生懸命勉強すれば、必ずわかるようになる。

Nihon-go wa muzukashii. Keredomo, isshoo-kenmee benkyoo-sure ba, kanarazu wakaru yoo ni naru.

Japanese is difficult. However, if you study hard, you will definitely be able to understand it.

B) 猫は、確かに可愛らしい動物です。けれども、私はアレルギーですから、飼えません。

Neko wa, tashika ni kawairashii doobutsu desu. Keredomo, watashi wa arerugii desu kara, kae-masen.

Cats are cute animals, to be sure. However, I'm allergic, so I can't keep one.

2) Expresses agreement with the first sentence, then offers another related alternative.

English approximation: "however" "yet"

A) 夏休みには、山に行くのもいい。けれども、海もまたいいね。

Natsu-yasumi ni wa, yama ni iku no mo ii. Keredomo, umi mo mata ii ne.

It's nice to go to the mountains during summer break. However, it would be nice to go to the beach, too.

KIRI きり

1. Establishes a limit for a topic.

1) In referring to quantity:

English approximation: "only" "just"

A) 二人(ふたり)[きり]でどこかへ行(い)ってしまいたい。

n. Futari [kiri] de dokoka e itte-shimai-tai.

I want to go away somewhere, just the two of us.

B) わたしはヨーロッパには、一度(いちど)行(い)った[きり]です。

Watashi wa yooroppa ni wa, ichido v. itta [kiri] desu.

I have been to Europe only once (so far).

2) In referring to a state or condition, shows that it has been unchanged.

English approximation: "continuously only doing ..."

A) 年老(としお)いた父(ちち)は、寝(ね)た[きり]になった。

Toshi oita chichi wa, v. neta [kiri] ni natta.

My aged father became bed-ridden. (literally: My aged father has become confined to continuously lying down.)

B) 座(すわ)りっ[きり]で仕事(しごと)を続(つづ)けたので、肩(かた)がこった。

v. Suwari-k [kiri] de shigoto o tsuzuketa node, kata ga kotta.

Since I have been working sitting down continuously, my shoulders have gotten tense.

3) Often followed later in the sentence by a negative, shows that there is a limit that has not yet been surpassed.

English approximation: "after doing ..., (not once done ...)"

A) 彼(かれ)は一度(いちど)電話(でんわ)をかけてきた[きり]、行方(ゆくえ)がわかりません。

Kare wa ichi-do denwa o kakete v. kita [kiri], yukue ga wakari-masen.

He called just once, and after that, (I) don't know where he went.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)とは、去年(きょねん)会った[きり]、手紙(てがみ)も出(だ)していない。

Kanojo to wa, kyonen $_{v.}$ atta [kiri], tegami mo dashite i-nai.

As for her, after I saw her last year, I haven't even sent her (a single) letter.

2. In the pattern "marukkiri まるっきり," followed by a negative or negative situation.

English approximation: "at all"

A) 僕(ぼく)は、お酒(さけ)はまるっ[きり]駄目(だめ)だ。

Boku wa, osake wa maruk[kiri] dame da.

I can't drink at all.

B) わたしは、まるっ[きり]泳(およ)げないんです。

Watashi wa, maruk[kiri] oyoge nai-n desu.

I can't swim at all.

KOSO こそ

1. Emphasizes what is preceded.

English approximation: "(indeed)"

A) あの山(やま)[こそ]、たくさんの登山者(とざんしゃ)が命(いのち)を落(お)とした山(やま)だ。

Ano $_{n.}$ yama [koso], takusan no tozan-sha ga inochi o otoshita yama da.

That mountain is (indeed) one on which many mountain climbers have lost their lives.

B) 来年(らいねん)[こそ]日本(にほん)へ行(い)ってみよう。

$_{n.}$ Rainen [koso] nihon e itte mi yoo.

Next year, (finally, indeed), let's go to Japan.

2. Often in the "... kara koso ～からこそ" or "... ba koso ～ばこそ" pattern, emphasizes a reason for an action.

English approximation: "(precisely) because"

A) こうなることがわかっていたから[こそ]、わたしは賛成しなかったのです。

Koo naru koto ga wakatte ita $_{p.}$ kara [koso], watashi wa sansee shinakatta no desu.

It's precisely because I knew things were going to work out this way that I didn't agree (before).

B) あなたのことを考えれば[こそ]、決断を思いとどまったのよ。

Anata no koto o kangaere $_{p.}$ ba [koso], ketsudan o omoi-todomatta no yo.

It's precisely because I thought about you that I stopped short of making a decision.

3. In the pattern "koso sure こそすれ," shows that the statement that precedes it is true or acceptable, but another opinion or additional comments are to follow.

English approximation: "do (something), but ..."

A) あの人は、ひとを褒め[こそ]すれ、けなしたことはない。

Ano hito wa, hito o home [koso] sure, kenashita koto wa nai.

That person does make encouraging remarks about others, but has never made pejorative ones.

4. In the pattern "sore koso それこそ," emphatic.

English approximation: "that (would ...) ..."

A) テストの前にインフルエンザにでもかかったら、それ[こそ]大変だ

よ。

Tesuto no mae ni infuruenza ni demo kakattara, sore [koso] taihen da yo.

If you were to catch the flu or something before your exam, <u>that</u> would be disastrous.

B) そんなことを彼女(かのじょ)に言(い)おうものなら、それ[こそ]ただでは済(す)まないよ。

Son-na koto o kanojo ni ioo mono nara, sore [koso] tada de wa suma-nai yo.

If you were to say something like that to her, <u>that</u> would get you into trouble.

KOTO こと

Women's language (except No. 6).

1. Serves to soften the impact of an opinion that is expressed. Not translatable.

A) そんなにいつまでもしょげているなんて、あなたらしくない[こと]よ。

Son-na ni itsu made mo shogete-iru nante, anata $_{adj.}$<u>rashiku-nai</u> [koto] yo.

It's not like you to be so down for so long.

B) これだけ言(い)ってもまだわからないのなら、もう知(し)らない[こと]よ。

Kore dake itte mo mada wakara-nai no nara, moo $_{v.}$<u>shira-nai</u> [koto] yo.

If you still don't understand after all I've said, then I just give up.

2. Expresses a mild surprise or a positive impression. Not translatable.

A) おや、珍しい鳥がいる[こと]。

Oya, mezurashii tori ga $_{v.}$iru [koto].

Look, there's a rare bird!

B) まあ、すてきな絵だ[こと]ねえ。

Maa, suteki na e $_{c.}$da [koto] nee.

My goodness, what a wonderful painting!

3. Placed at the end of a sentence, accompanies a casual question. Not translatable.

A) これからおじゃましてもいい[こと]?

Kore kara ojama-shite mo $_{adj.}$ii [koto]?

Would it be all right to come over now?

B) 風邪はもうすっかりよくなった[こと]?

Kaze wa moo sukkari $_{v.}$yokunatta [koto]?

Are you completely over your cold?

4. Makes a rhetorical question that is exclamatory.

English approximation: "isn't it ..."

A) 新婚旅行はヨーロッパですって? すてきだ[こと]。

Shinkon-ryokoo wa yooroppa desu-tte? Suteki $_{c.}$da [koto].

I've heard that (your) honeymoon will be in Europe. Isn't that wonderful!

B) 彼女の会社、年休五週間ですって。うらやましい[こと]。

Kanojo no kaisha, nenkyuu go-shuukan desu-tte. $_{adj.}$urayama-shii [koto].

Her company has five weeks vacation per year, I hear. Isn't it enviable!

5. Expresses a casual suggestion for action, following a negative form of a verb.

English approximation: "how about ...? " "why don't we ...? "

A) これから映画(えいが)にでも行(い)きません[こと]?

Kore kara eega ni demo $_{v.}$ iki-masen [koto]?

How about going to a movie now?

B) 遅(おそ)くなったから、タクシーでも拾(ひろ)わない[こと]?

Osoku natta kara, takushii demo $_{v.}$ hirowa-nai [koto]?

It's gotten late, how about catching a taxi?

6. Transforms a statement into a strict command. Not translatable.

A) 期日(きじつ)に遅(おく)れずレホートを提出(ていしゅつ)する[こと]。

Kijitsu ni okurezu repooto o $_{v.}$ teeshutsu-suru [koto].

Hand in the report without missing the deadline.

B) 借(か)りた金(かね)は必(かなら)ず返(かえ)す[こと]。

Karita kane wa kanarazu $_{v.}$ kaesu [koto].

Make sure (you) pay back the money (you) borrow.

KURAI (GURAI) くらい(ぐらい)

1. Indicates that a given quantity is approximate.

English approximation: "about" "approximately"

A) もう一週間(いっしゅうかん)[くらい]で花(はな)が咲(さ)くでしょう。

Moo $_{n.}$ is-shuukan [kurai] de hana ga saku deshoo.

The flowers will probably bloom in about a week.

B) 水(みず)をグラスに半分(はんぶん)[ぐらい]ください。

Mizu o gurasu ni n. hanbun [gurai] kudasai.

Please give me about half a glass of water.

2. Belittles something, in showing that it is simple or elementary.

English approximation: (something like)

A) 簡単(かんたん)な料理(りょうり)[くらい]わたしだって出来(でき)るわ。

Kantan na n. ryoori [kurai] watashi datte dekiru wa.

Even I can cook (something like) a simple meal.

B) 洗濯(せんたく)[くらい]自分(じぶん)でしなさい。

n. Sentaku [kurai] jibun de shinasai.

Do (something like) your laundry yourself.

3. In citing one situation, indicates its extent.

English approximation: "to the extent that ..."

A) 空一面(そらいちめん)真(ま)っ赤(か)になる[くらい]の、見事(みごと)な夕焼(ゆうや)けでした。

Sora ichimen makka ni v. naru [kurai] no, migotona yuuyake deshita.

The sunset was splendid, to the extent that the whole sky turned crimson.

B) 主人(しゅじん)はこんなに遅(おそ)くまで働(はたら)いている[くらい]だから、よほど仕事(しごと)が忙(いそが)しいらしい。

Shujin wa kon-na ni osoku made v. hataraite-iru [kurai] dakara, yohodo shigoto ga isogashii rashii.

Since it's to the extent that my husband is working this late, he must be quite busy at work.

4. Following a noun, a nominal, or a pronoun, establishes it as a basis for comparison. Not translatable.

A) 地震(じしん)[くらい]恐(こわ)いものはない。

n. Jishin [kurai] kowai mono wa nai.

There's nothing more scary than an earthquake.

B) お父(とう)さん[くらい]背(せ)が高(たか)かったらいいのになあ。

n. Otoosan [kurai] se ga taka-kattara ii no ni naa.

I wish I were as tall as my father.

5. Indicates that what precedes it is something undesirable or unlikable. English approximation: "rather than doing ..."

A) そんなまずいものを食(た)べる[くらい]なら、何(なに)も食(た)べないほうがましだ。

Son-na mazui mono o v. taberu [kurai] nara, nani mo tabe-nai hoo ga mashi da.

Rather than eating something that gross, I prefer not to eat anything at all.

B) 期日(きじつ)に遅(おく)れる[くらい]なら、徹夜(てつや)をして完成(かんせい)させたほうがましだ。

Kijitsu ni v. okureru [kurai] nara, tetsuya o shite kansee-saseta hoo ga mashi da.

Rather than being late for the deadline, (I) prefer to finish it by staying up all night.

KUSE-NI くせ-に Combination particle

A combination of the noun "kuse くせ (habit)" and the particle "ni に."

1. As a conjunctive particle, indicating that the actual situation is the reverse of the "norm" that is given in the preceding clause. Implies a criticism of that "norm."

English approximation: "even though" "but"

A) 彼(かれ)は大学生(だいがくせい)の[くせに]、まだ母親(ははおや)に洗濯(せんたく)してもらっているんだって。

Kare wa daigakusee p. no [kuse ni], mada hahaoya ni sentaku shite-moratte-iru-n datte.

Even though he's a college student, he still has his mother do his laundry.

B) いつも寝坊(ねぼう)する[くせに]、今日(きょう)はずいぶん早(はや)く起(お)きたね。

Itsumo v. neboo-suru [kuse ni], kyoo wa zuibun hayaku okita ne.

(You) usually get up late, but you got up so early today.

2. At the end of a sentence or phrase, expresses a slight resentment.

English approximation: Not readily translatable, the implication is "(you) did ..., remember?" said in a slightly resentful tone of voice.

A) ミルクまた残(のこ)したの。子供(こども)の時(とき)はあんなに好(す)きだった[くせに]。

Miruku mata nokoshita no. Kodomo no toki wa an-na ni suki c. datta [kuse ni].

You didn't finish your milk again? You liked it so much when you were a child.

B) やめなさい、そんなにたくさん食(た)べるのは。この間(あいだ)もおなかをこわした[くせに]。

Yamenasai, son-na ni takusan taberu no wa. Kono aida mo

onaka o $_{v.}$kowashita [kuse ni].

Stop eating so much. You got an upset stomach the other day.

MADE まで

FUNDAMENTALS OF "MADE まで"

Generally, this particle establishes a temporal or spatial limit. Its most common meaning is "until," or "up to a certain point." Make sure you distinguish between this particle and the particle "made ni までに," which means "by."

1. Indicates a limit or destination. Often in the pattern "... kara ... made ～から～まで."

1) Temporal limits.

English approximation: "to" "till" "until"

A) わたしは九時(くじ)から五時(ごじ)[まで]仕事(しごと)をします。

Watashi wa ku-ji kara $_{n.}$go-ji [made]

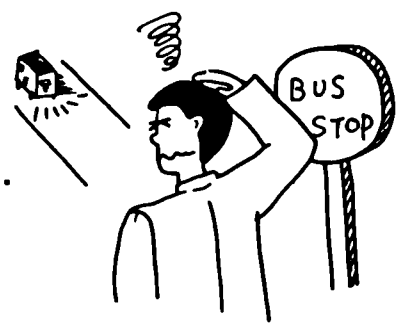
shigoto o shi-masu.

I work from nine to five.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)は朝(あさ)から晩(ばん)[まで]スケートの練習(れんしゅう)をした。

Kanojo wa asa kara $_{n.}$ban [made] sukeeto no renshuu o shita.

She practiced skating from morning till night.



C) 次(つぎ)のバス[まで]三十分(さんじゅっぷん)もある。

Tsugi no $_{n.}$basu [made] sanjup-pun mo aru.

We have to wait for another thirty minutes

until the next bus.

D) 父(ちち)は百歳(ひゃくさい)[まで]生(い)きた。

Chichi wa n. hyaku-sai [made] ikita.

My father lived to be a hundred years old.

E) 僕(ぼく)は九歳(きゅうさい)[まで]ローマで育(そだ)った。

Boku wa n. kyuu-sai [made] rooma de sodatta.

I was raised in Rome until I was nine years old.

F) ストライキが解決(かいけつ)する[まで]電車(でんしゃ)は動(うご)かない。

Sutoraiki ga v. kaiketsu-suru [made] densha wa ugoka-nai.

There will be no train service until the strike is over.

G) 今(いま)[まで]何(なに)をしていたの？

n. Ima [made] nani o shite ita no?

What have you been doing until now?

2) Spatial limits.

English approximation: "to" "as far as"

A) 私(わたし)は、うちから学校(がっこう)[まで]自転車(じてんしゃ)で通(かよ)っています。

Watashi wa, uchi kara n. gakkoo [made] jitensha de kayotte i-masu.

I commute from my house to school by bicycle.

B) この汽車(きしゃ)は、青森(あおもり)[まで]行(い)きます。

Kono kisha wa, n. aomori [made] iki-masu.

This train will go to Aomori.

C) 中間テストの範囲は一課から四課 [まで] です。

Chuukan-tesuto no han-i wa ik-ka kara n. yon-ka [made] desu.

The mid term exam will cover lessons one to four.

D) どこ [まで] いらっしゃいますか？

n. Doko [made] irasshaimasu ka?

Where are you going? (literally: To which place are you going?)

E) 奈良 [まで] の切符を二枚ください。

n. Nara [made] no kippu o ni-mai kudasai.

Two tickets to Nara, please.

3) Limits of quantity, range, or scope.

English approximation: “up to” “within”

A) 結婚式の費用は百万円 [まで] にしておこう。

Kekkon-shiki no hiyoo wa n. hyaku-man en [made] ni shite-okoo.

Let’s keep the budget for our wedding within one million yen.

B) ミスサクラ・コンテストの参加者を募集します。年齢は二十五歳 [まで] です。

Misu sakura kontesuto no sanka-sha o boshuu shi-masu. Nenree wa n. nijuu-go sai [made] desu.

We are looking for contestants for the Miss Sakura pageant. You must be under twenty-five years old. (literally: As for the age (limit), it’s up to twenty-five.)

C) 本の貸し出しは一回三冊 [まで] です。

Hon no kashi-dashi wa ik-kai $_{n.}$ san-satsu [made] desu.

You may borrow up to three books at a time.

2. Shows the extent to which a situation or action can/has already reach(ed).

English approximation: "until" "to" "as far as" "to the extent of"

A) 洪水(こうずい)で水(みず)が床(ゆか)の上(うえ)[まで]来(き)た。

Koozui de mizu ga $_{ph.}$ yuka no ue [made] kita.

The water from the flood reached (as far as) above floor level.

B) ご飯(はん)は最後(さいご)の一粒(ひとつぶ)[まで]食(た)べなさい。

Gohan wa $_{ph.}$ saigo no hito-tsubu [made] tabenasai.

Eat even the last grain of rice in your bowl.

C) 奨学金(しょうがくきん)がもらえるようになる[まで]頑張(がんば)ろう。

$_{cl.}$ Shoogakukin ga moraeru yoo ni naru [made] ganbaroo.

I'll work hard until I qualify for a scholarship.

D) 目的地(もくてきち)が見(み)つからなくて、わたしは足(あし)が棒(ぼう)のようになる[まで]探(さが)して歩(ある)いた。

Mokuteki-chi ga mitsukara-nakute, watashi wa $_{cl.}$ ashi ga boo no yoo ni naru [made] sagashite aruita.

Unable to find my destination, I walked in search of it until I felt as if my legs were about to fall off.

3. Indicates that a situation has reached the extent that even an extreme example is now applicable.

English approximation: "even"

A) 友達(ともだち)に[まで]見放(みはな)されるようじゃ、おしまいだ。

Tomodachi $_{p.}$ ni [made] mihana-sareru yoo ja, oshimai da.

If even your friends desert you, that's the end.

B) 坊主憎けりゃ袈裟[まで]憎い。(Proverb)

Boozu nikukerya $_{n.}$ **kesa** [made] **nikui.**

When (you) hate the monk, (you) even hate his surplice.

4. Indicates that an action is/was done by chance.

English approximation: "just" "merely"

A) 今朝早起きしたのは、たまたま小鳥の鳴き声で目が覚めた[まで]だよ。

Kesa hayaoki shita no wa, tamatama kotori no nakigoe de me ga $_{v.}$ **sameta** [made] **da yo.**

I got up early this morning merely because I happened to have been woken up by the singing of birds.

B) わたしが会社で出世できたのは、運がよかった[まで]のことです。

Watashi ga kaisha de shusse dekita no wa, un ga $_{adj.}$ **yokatta** [made] **no koto desu.**

It is just luck that I was able to climb up the corporate ladder.

C) 今度はいついらしてくださるかと思って…。ちょっとお電話した[まで]よ。

Kondo wa itsu irashite kudasaru ka to omotte .... Chotto $_{v.}$ **odenwa-shita** [made] **yo.**

I was wondering when you'd be coming over again ... I just called (for that), that's all.

D) そんなにおっしゃらないでください。わたしはただ当り前のことをした[まで]です。

Son-na ni osshara-nai de kudasai. Watashi wa tada atarimae no

koto o $_{v.}$ shita [made] desu.

Please don't thank me so much. I just did what I should have done.

MADE-MO　まで-も　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "made まで" and "mo も."

1. Followed by a negation later in the sentence or clause, indicates that a situation or action preceding it is not necessary, and that it is the obvious or norm.

English approximation: "it's not necessary to ..."

A) いまさら申し上げる[までも]ありませんが、私は来月定年退職いたします。

Imasara $_{v.}$ mooshi-ageru [made mo] ari-masen ga, watakushi wa raigetsu teenen-taishoku itashi-masu.

(I know that) it's not necessary to say it at this point (i.e. because everyone knows about it by now), but I will be retiring next month.

B) 手紙に書く[までも]ないことですから、電話でお伝えいたします。

Tegami ni $_{v.}$ kaku [made mo] nai koto desu kara, denwa de otsutae itashi-masu.

Since it's not necessary to write a letter, I'll (just) tell you over the phone.

2. As a conjunction, shows that although an extreme situation may not be true or possible, a lesser one is desirable or necessary.

English approximation: "even though (it's not to the extent that) ..."

A) はっきりと覚えていない[までも]、少しは思い出せるでしょう？

Hakkiri to v. oboete-i-nai [made mo], sukoshi wa omoi-daseru deshoo?

Even though you might not remember it very clearly, can't you remember just a little bit of it?

B) 入院(にゅういん)しない[までも]、充分(じゅうぶん)な休養(きゅうよう)が必要(ひつよう)です。

v. Nyuuin-shi-nai [made mo], juubun na kyuuyoo ga hitsuyoo desu.

Even though it's not necessary for (you) to be hospitalized, (you) need plenty of rest.

MADE-NI まで-に Combination particle

A combination of the particles "made まで" and "ni に."

1. Indicates that a situation or action is not to be taken as more than it is; has a belittling function, often in a gesture of humbling oneself.

English approximation: "just for/to ..."

A) わたし達(たち)、今日(きょう)お宅(たく)の隣(となり)に越(こ)してまいりましたので、ごあいさつ[までに]お伺(うかが)いしました。

Watashi-tachi, kyoo otaku no tonari ni koshite mairi-mashita node, n. goaisatsu [made ni] oukagai-shi-mashita.

Since we have moved in next door to you today, we're here just to introduce ourselves.

B) 御結婚(ごけっこん)おめでとうございます。ほんのお祝(いわい)のしるし[までに]ささやかな品(しな)をお送(おく)りしました。

Gokekkon omedetoo gozaimasu. Hon no oiwai no n. shirushi

made ni sasayaka na shina o ookuri-shi-mashita.

Congratulations on your marriage. We have sent you this small token to express our congratulations.

2. Shows to what extent something has reached.

English approximation: "(up to)"

A) 今期(こんき)の利益(りえき)は百億円(ひゃくおくえん)までに達(たっ)した。

Konki no rieki wa n. hyaku-oku en made ni tasshita.

The profits this term reached (up to) ten billion yen.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)の名前(なまえ)は、世界(せかい)の隅々(すみずみ)までに知(し)れわたった。

Kanojo no namae wa, sekai no n. sumi-zumi made ni shire-watatta.

Her name became known throughout the world. (i.e. Her fame reached (up to) the point where her name was known throughout the world.)

3. Sets a time limit.

English approximation: "before"

A) 飛行機(ひこうき)が出(で)るまでには、まだ一時間(いちじかん)ぐらいある。

Hikooki ga v. deru made ni wa, mada ichi-jikan gurai aru.

There's still about an hour before the plane leaves.

B) この絵(え)をかき上(あ)げるまでには、あと一カ月(いっかげつ)は必要(ひつよう)です。

Kono e o v. kaki-ageru made ni wa, ato ikka-getsu wa hitsuyoo desu.

I need at least a month before I can finish this painting.

MO も

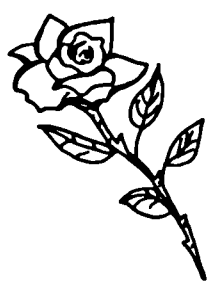
FUNDAMENTALS OF "MO も"

When this particle follows a noun, a nominal, or a particle, it usually indicates a similar quality between two things, which come before and after it. When "mo も" is preceded by an adjective or a verb, it indicates that more than one action occurs. Note that "mo も" is usually not used after the particles "wa は" and "ga が" or before the particle "o を," since it replaces these particles. For example:

これ[は]バラです。

Kore [wa] bara desu.

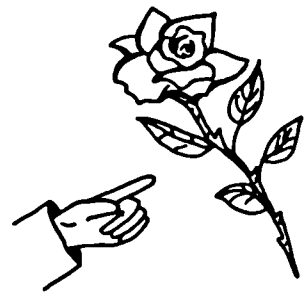
This is a rose



あれ[~~は~~][も]バラです。

Are [~~ha~~][mo] bara desu.

That is a rose, too.



水野(みずの)さん[が]来(き)ました。

Mizuno-san [ga] ki-mashita.

Ms. Mizuno has come.

佐々木(ささき)さん[~~が~~][も]来(き)ました。

Sasaki-san [~~ga~~][mo] ki-mashita.

Ms. Sasaki also came.

彼女(かのじょ)はリンゴ[を]食(た)べました。

Kanojo wa ringo [o] tabe mashita.

She ate an apple.

彼女(かのじょ)はみかん[も][~~を~~]食(た)べました。

Kanojo wa mikan [mo][~~o~~] tabe-mashita.

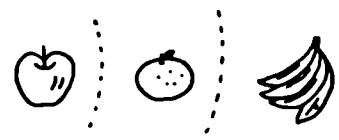
She also ate an orange.

Furthermore, below are the differences in usage of particles with similar functions, "to と" and "ya や," and "mo も."

A) Simple listing of nouns.

リンゴ[と]みかん[と]バナナ

ringo [to] mikan [to] banana



apples, oranges and bananas.

B) Simple listing of nouns.

リンゴ[や]みかん[や]バナナ

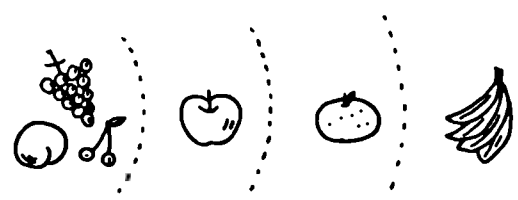
ringo [ya] mikan [ya] banana

apples, oranges, bananas and the like.

C) Additive. "also" "on top of"

リンゴ[も]みかん[も]バナナ[も]

ringo [mo] mikan [mo] banana [mo]



also apples, oranges and bananas.

1. Indicates that two subjects are the same or the same kind.

English approximation: "also" "too" "(not)..., either"

A) あなたは学生(がくせい)です。わたし[も]学生(がくせい)です。

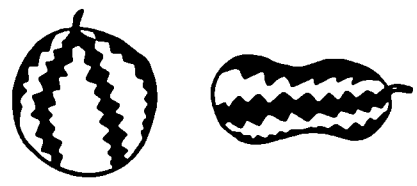
Anata wa gakusee desu. n. Watashi [mo] gakusee desu.

You are a student. I'm a student, too.

B) これはすいかで、あれ[も]すいかです。

Kore wa suika de, n. are [mo] suika desu.

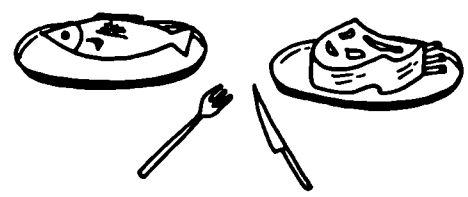
This is a watermelon, and that is a watermelon, too.



C) わたしは肉(にく)を食(た)べました。わたしは魚(さかな)[も]食(た)べました。

Watashi wa niku o tabe-mashita. Watashi wa n. sakana [mo] tabe-mashita.

I ate meat. I ate fish, too.



D) わたしはコーヒーを飲(の)みません。わたしはコーラ[も]飲(の)みません。

Watashi wa koohii o nomi-masen. Watashi wa n. koora [mo] nomi-masen.

I don't drink coffee. I don't drink soda, either.

E) 僕(ぼく)はピクニックに行(い)きませんでした。彼女(かのじょ)[も]ピクニックに行(い)きませんでした。

Boku wa pikunikku ni iki-masen deshita. n. Kanojo [mo] pikunik-ku ni iki-masen deshita.

I didn't go on the picnic. She didn't go on the picnic, either.

2. In the pattern "... mo ... mo ～も～も," lists additively two or more things in a similar category.

English approximation: "too" "also" "both" "as well as" "either ... or"

A) あなた[も]わたし[も]、同(おな)じ学校(がっこう)の学生(がくせい)です。

n. Anata [mo] n. watashi [mo] onaji gakkoo no gakusee desu.

Both you and I are students at the same school.

B) わたしはワイン[も]ビール[も]飲(の)みます。

Watashi wa n. wain [mo] n. biiru [mo] nomi-masu.

I drink both wine and beer.

C) その白(しろ)いの[も]青(あお)いの[も]一(ひと)つずつください。

Sono shiroi $_{n.}$no も aoi $_{n.}$no も hitotsu zutsu kudasai.

I want to have one each of that white one and that blue one.

D) あの子はお父さんにも お母さんにも 死なれた。

Ano ko wa otoosan $_{p.}$ni も okaasan $_{p.}$ni も shinareta.

That child has lost his father as well as his mother.

E) 僕は勉強するのも 働くのも 嫌いだ。

Boku wa benkyoo-suru $_{n.}$no も hataraku $_{n.}$no も kirai da.

I don't like to study or to work.

F) 彼女は美しくも あるし優しくも ある。

Kanojo wa $_{adj.}$utsukushiku も arushi $_{adj.}$yasashiku も aru.

She is beautiful as well as kind.

3. In the pattern "... mo ... mo ～も～も," often in the forms "... de mo ～でも" or "... te mo ～ても," indicates that (1) there is barely any difference between the things/actions, and that (2) another action is done regardless of the given two conditions/actions.

English approximation: "doesn't make much difference" "doesn't matter" "regardless of"

A) 献金は百円でも 二百円でも 結構です。

Kenkin wa hyaku en $_{p.}$de も ni-hyaku en $_{p.}$de も kekkoo desu.

Any amount of contribution would be appreciated; it doesn't matter if it's one hundred or two hundred yen.

B) 日本語で書いても 英語で書いても 構いません。

Nihon-go de $_{v.}$kaite も eego de $_{v.}$kaite も kamai-masen.

It doesn't matter whether you write in Japanese or in English.

4. Indicates an addition to something already present.

English approximation: "in addition" "as well as"

A) お父(とう)さん、僕(ぼく)[も]映画(えいが)に連(つ)れて行(い)ってよ。

Otoosan, n. boku [mo] eega ni tsurete-itte yo.

Dad, could you take me to the movie, too?

B) お母(かあ)さん、このケーキ[も]食(た)べていい？

Okaasan, kono n. keeki [mo] tabete ii?

Mom, can I eat this cake, too?

5. Emphasizes quantity, distance or frequency.

English approximation: "as many/much as" "no fewer/less than" "as long a time as" "as far (a distance) as"

A) わたしはもう十年(じゅうねん)[も]日本(にほん)に帰(かえ)っていません。

Watashi wa moo n. juu-nen [mo] nihon ni kaette i-masen.

I haven't gone back to Japan for (as long a time as) ten years.

B) 彼(かれ)は八人(はちにん)[も]兄弟(きょうだい)がある。

Kare wa n. hachi-nin [mo] kyoodai ga aru.

He has eight brothers!

C) あの犬(いぬ)は君(きみ)の背丈(せたけ)ほど[も]ある。

Ano inu wa kimi no setake n. hodo [mo] aru.

That dog is as tall as you.

D) このつぼは十万円(じゅうまんえん)[も]するんだって。

Kono tsubo wa n. juu-man en [mo] suru-n datte.

They say that this vase costs as much as one hundred thousand yen.

6. Indicates that a quantity/number is approximate.

English approximation: "around" "about"

A) この仕事はもう三日 も あれば出来るでしょう。

Kono shigoto wa moo n. mik-ka mo are ba dekiru deshoo.

This work should be done in about three more days.

B) 三百万円 も あればいい車が買えますよ。

n. San-byaku-man en mo are ba ii kuruma ga kae-masu yo.

If you have around three million yen, you can buy a nice car.

7. Used in a negative sentence, emphasizes the lack of something. If it follows an interrogative pronoun, or nouns such as once, one day, etc., it indicates total negation of its existence.

English approximation: "not any" "no ..." "nothing"

A) だれ も 居ませんか？

n. Dare mo i-masen ka?

Is there no one (there)?

B) 今日は店はどこ も 閉まっている。

Kyoo wa mise wa n. doko mo shimatte-iru.

No stores are open today. (literally: Today, stores everywhere are closed.)

D) わたしは一度 も スキーをしたことがありません。

Watashi wa n. ichi-do mo sukii o shita koto ga ari-masen.

I've never skied. (literally: I have never skied even once.)

E) 大したごちそう も ございませんが、どうぞ召し上ってください。

Taishita n. gochisoo mo gozaimasen ga, doozo meshi-agatte kudasai.

Even though there's nothing special, please go ahead and eat.

8. Gives an additional, unexpected situation or condition.

English approximation: "even"

A) 彼(かれ)はテニスの選手(せんしゅ)[も]していたらしい。

Kare wa tenisu no $_{n.}$senshu [mo] shite ita rashii.

I've heard that he was even a competitive tennis player once. (implying that he has other impressive qualities.)

B) 熱(ねつ)が高(たか)いのに、妹(いもうと)は苦(くる)しいと[も]言(い)わないで、じっと寝(ね)ていました。

Netsu ga takai noni, imooto wa kurushii $_{p.}$to [mo] iwa-nai de, jitto nete i-mashita.

Though she had a high fever, my sister was patiently lying in bed without even complaining.

9. Colloquial expression. In the forms "koo mo こうも," "soo mo そうも," "aa mo ああも" (meaning "kon-na ni こんなに" "son-na ni そんなに" "an-na ni あんなに"). Indicates the extent of a state/action.

English approximation: "this/that many" "this/that much"

A) そう[も]泣(な)かれては、わたしも困(こま)るよ。

$_{adv.}$Soo [mo] nakarete wa, watashi mo komaru yo.

You cry that much, then I'm at a loss

B) 外国(がいこく)にいると、ああ[も]日本食(にほんしょく)が恋(こい)しくなるものだろうか。

Gaikoku ni iru to, $_{adv.}$aa [mo] nihon-shoku ga koishiku naru mono daroo ka.

When one is in a foreign country, does one crave for Japanese food that much, I wonder.

MONO もの

1. Placed at the end of a sentence:

1) Gives a reason, which precedes it. Often followed by "ne ね" or "na な," which adds a slight exclamatory sense.

English approximation: "because"

A) お嬢(じょう)さんのピアノのお上手(じょうず)なこと！ 奥様(おくさま)もピアニストでいらっしゃいます[もの]ね。

Ojoosan no piano no ojoozu na koto! Okusama mo pianisuto de v. irasshai-masu [mono] ne.

How well your daughter plays the piano! It's because your wife is also a pianist.

B) この浜辺(はまべ)懐(なつ)かしいね。新婚旅行(しんこんりょこう)のときに来(き)たところだ[もの]ね。

Kono hamabe natsukashii ne. Shinkon-ryokoo no toki ni kita tokoro c. da [mono] ne.

This beach brings back memories, doesn't it? It's because we came here on our honeymoon.

2) Following a certain given reason, expresses dissatisfaction, or desire. Colloquial, casual usage.

English approximation: "because"

A) ねえ、お母(かあ)さん、あのおもちゃ買(か)ってよ。僕(ぼく)どうしても欲(ほ)しいんだ[もの]。

Nee, okaasan, ano omocha katte yo. Boku dooshitemo hoshii-n c. da [mono].

Mommy, could you buy me that toy... because I really really want it.

B) 今晩来てくださいませんか？　わたしどうしてもお会いしたいんです**もの**。

Konban kite kudasai-masen ka? Watashi dooshitemo oai-shi-tai-n c. **desu** **mono**.

Could you come over tonight? Because I really want to see you.

2. As a conjunctive particle, follows a clause to transform it into a reason for something.

English approximation: "since" "..., so" or merely a comma.

A) わたし成人になったんだ**もの**、少しぐらいお酒飲んでもいいでしょう？

Watashi seejin ni natta-n c. **da** **mono**, **sukoshi gurai osake nonde mo ii deshoo?**

I've now of age, it's all right for me to have a little something to drink, isn't it?

B) 息子は英語がまだよくわかりません**もの**、一人で買物に行くのは無理ですわ。

Musuko wa eego ga mada yoku v. **wakari-masen** **mono**, **hitori de kaimono ni iku no wa muri desu wa.**

Since my son doesn't understand English very well yet, it's not possible for him to go shopping by himself.

MONO-DE(MON-DE) もの-で(もん-で) Combination particle

A combination of the noun "mono もの" and the copula "de で." Indicates that the preceding clause is the reason for the action in the following

clause. In colloquial usage, it often takes the form "mon de もんで."

English approximation: "because" or simply comma.

A) あんまりうれしかった[もんで]、ほかのこと全部忘れちゃった。

Anmari $_{adj.}$ureshikatta [mon de], hoka no koto zenbu wasure-chatta.

I was so happy, I just forgot about everything else!

B) そのニュースを今聞いた[もので]、びっくりしてお電話をおかけしているところです。

Sono nyuusu o ima $_{v.}$kiita [mono de], bikkuri-shite odenwa o okake-shite-iru tokoro desu.

Because I just heard the news, I was stunned and I'm calling you now.

MONOKA(MONKA) ものか(もんか)

Placed at the end of a sentence, makes an exclamatory, emphatic negation. Often takes the pattern of "mono desu ka ものですか." In colloquial usage, it takes the forms "monka もんか" or "mon desu ka もんですか." Not translatable.

A) 僕の気持ちが君にわかってたまる[ものか]。

Boku no kimochi ga kimi ni wakatte $_{v.}$tamaru [monoka].

How could you ever know how I'm feeling!

B) 彼のほうが悪いんですもの。わたし絶対に謝る[もんですか]。

Kare no hoo ga warui-n desu mono. Watashi zettai ni $_{v.}$ayama-ru [mon desu ka].

He's the one who's at fault. I'll never apologize (to him)!

MONONARA(MON-NARA) ものなら(もん-なら)

"Mon-nara もんなら" in colloquial expression.

1. Following a clause stating a conjecture or a will, indicates that the result of such actions may be undesirable.

English approximation: "should there be ..."

A) タバコの吸殻(すいがら)を捨(す)ててはいけないよ。火事(かじ)にでもなろう ものなら 大変(たいへん)だから。

Tabako no suigara o sutete wa ike-nai yo. Kaji ni demo $_{v.}$ naroo mononara taihen da kara.

Don't throw your cigarette butts around. Should there be a fire, it would be disastrous.

B) 早(はや)く寝(ね)なさいよ。あしたの朝(あさ)、寝坊(ねぼう)しよう ものなら、遠足(えんそく)にいけなくなるよ。

Hayaku nenasai yo. Ashita no asa, neboo $_{v.}$ shiyoo mononara, ensoku ni ike-naku naru yo.

Go to bed early. Should you oversleep tomorrow morning, you won't be able to go on your school trip.

2. Proposes a hypothetical situation, with an implication that the speaker does not care even if such a situation arise. Has a critical, resentful tone.

English approximation: "if ... then"

A) あなたがどんなに貧乏(びんぼう)になってもいい ものなら、何(なに)も言(い)いませんよ。

Anata ga don-na ni binboo ni natte mo $_{adj.}$ii mononara, nani

mo ii-masen yo.

If it's all right with you no matter how poor you become, then I won't say anything.

B) そんなのでいい[ものなら]、どこにでも売(う)っていますよ。

Son-na no de adj.ii [mononara], doko ni demo utte i-masu yo.

If something like that is all right, then they should have it in any store.

3. After a possibility, dares the party addressed to perform it. A rather antagonistic tone (though possibly playfully so).

English approximation: "if (you think) you can ..."

A) このうなぎ、つかめる[ものなら]、つかんでごらん。

Kono unagi, v.tsukameru [mononara], tsukande goran.

If (you think) you can grab this eel, go right ahead and try grabbing (it).

B) 飛(と)べる[ものなら]飛(と)んでごらんよ。

v.Toberu [mononara] tonde goran yo.

If (you think) you can fly, go ahead and try flying.

MONONO　ものの

Establishes a situation, then shows that another situation has arisen that conflicts with it.

English approximation: "even though" "although"

A) いつもより早(はや)くうちを出(で)た[ものの]、バスがなかなか来(こ)なくて、遅刻(ちこく)してしまった。

Itsumo yori hayaku uchi o $_{v.}$ deta **monono**, basu ga naka-naka ko-naku te, chikoku-shite shimatta.

Although I had left my house earlier than usual, the bus didn't come for quite a while, and I was late.

B) 車は買った**ものの**、まだ恐くてハイウェイは走れない。

Kuruma wa $_{v.}$ katta **monono**, mada kowaku te haiuee wa hashire-nai.

Even though (I) have bought a car, I can't drive on the highway because I'm still afraid.

C) 間に合ったからいいような**ものの**、うちを出るのが、もう少し遅かったら、飛行機に乗り遅れるところだったよ。

Maniatta kara ii $_{adj.}$ yoona **monono**, uchi o deru no ga moo sukoshi osokattara, hikooki ni nori-okureru tokoro datta yo.

Though it's all right now because we made it on time, if we had left the house a little bit later, we would've missed our plane.

D) 安いからとはいう**ものの**、たくさん買うとかえって損をすることがある。

Yasui kara to wa $_{v.}$ yuu **monono**, takusan kau to kaette son o suru koto ga aru.

Even though it's cheap, there are times when buying too much of it can make you lose out in the end.

MONO-O　もの-を

1. Expresses dissatisfaction over the current condition, implying that

there was an alternative which would have produced better results.

English approximation: "although"

A) 早く休めばよかった[ものを]、無理をして働いたので、病気になってしまった。

Hayaku yasume ba $_{adj.}$yokatta [mono-o], muri o shite hataraita node, byooki ni natte shimatta.

Although I would have been fine if I had taken a rest earlier, because I pushed myself unreasonably to work, I became ill.

2. An exclamatory particle. Placed at the end of a sentence, indicates dissatisfaction or regret.

English approximation: "if only ..."

A) こんなに雨でずぶぬれになって！　出かける前に天気予報を聞いてくればよかった[ものを]。

Kon-na ni ame de zubunure ni natte! Dekakeru mae ni tenki-yohoo o kiite kure ba $_{adj.}$yokatta [mono-o].

You got rained on and are soaking wet! If only you had listened to the weather forecast before you left, you wouldn't have (gotten so wet).

B) 外で夕食すませてきたの？　待っていたのに。一言電話してくれればいい[ものを]。

Soto de yuushoku sumasete kita no? Matte ita noni. Hitokoto denwa shite kurereba $_{adj.}$ii [mono-o].

You ate dinner out? I was waiting for you. If only you had called me to tell me.

NA(NAA)　な(なあ)

"Na　な" and "naa　なあ" are used in almost the same way, but "naa　なあ" has an even more emotional tone.

1. As an exclamatory particle, expresses emotion. Found in men's language. Not translatable.

A) 少し会わないうちに大きくなった[な(なあ)]。

Sukoshi awa-nai uchi ni ookiku $_{v.}$ natta [na(naa)].

You've grown so much during the little time I haven't seen you!

B) 野菜の値段が随分上がった[な(なあ)]。

Yasai no nedan ga zuibun $_{v.}$ agatta [na(naa)].

How the price of vegetables has increased!

C) ビール三ダースか、ずいぶんたくさん飲んだ[な(なあ)]。

Biiru san-daasu ka, zuibun takusan $_{v.}$ nonda [na(naa)].

Three dozen beers--you drank a lot!

2. Places a casual emphasis on a decision, suggestion or opinion. Not translatable.

A) あしたも試験だ。いやだ[な(なあ)]。

Ashita mo shiken da. Iya $_{c.}$ da [na(naa)].

I have an exam again tomorrow. What a pain!

B) 僕は、そのうわさは本当だと思う[な]。

Boku wa sono uwasa wa hontoo da to $_{v.}$ omou [na].

I think that rumor is true.

3. Elicits a response from the party addressed, in agreement with the statement made. Usually seen in men's language.

English approximation: "..., right?"

A) お借りした本は、確かにお返ししました[な]。

Okari-shita hon wa, tashika ni v. okaeshi-shi-mashita [na].

I definitely returned the book that I borrowed, right?

B) 去年の春、京都でお目にかかりました[な]。

Kyonen no haru, kyooto de v. ome-ni-kakari-mashita [na].

We met in Kyoto last spring, right?

4. Expresses a casual remark of wishful thinking.

English approximation: "I wish ..."

A) 毎日忙しすぎる。少しのんびりしたい[なあ]。

Mainichi isogashi-sugiru. Sukoshi v. nonbirishi-tai [naa].

I'm too busy every day. I wish I could relax a little bit.

B) 南十字星が見えるといい[な(なあ)]。

Minami-juuji-see ga mieru to adj. ii [na(naa)].

I hope I'll be able to see the Southern Cross.

5. Following phrases such as "... (te) kudasai ～(て)ください" and "... nasai ～なさい," asks the party addressed for a favor. Found in women's language. Not translatable.

A) あした必ずお電話ください[な]。

Ashita kanarazu odenwa v. kudasai [na].

Please be sure to give me a call tomorrow.

B) もう十二時すぎですよ。早くおやすみなさい[な]。

Moo juuni-ji sugi desu yo. Hayaku v. oyasumi-nasai [na].

It's past twelve already. You should go to bed soon.

6. Placed at the end of a phrase, sets a tone where the speaker is lecturing

to the addressee. Found in men's language. Not translatable.

A) あの[な]、このことは内緒(ないしょ)だよ。

interj. Ano [na], kono koto wa naisho da yo.

Listen, this is a secret, (ok)?

B) ところで[な]、いいニュースがあるんだよ。

conj. Tokorode [na], ii nyuusu ga aru-n da yo.

By the way, I have some good news.

7. Placed at the end of a sentence, transforms it into a negative imperative. Strongly forbids an action.

English approximation: "don't ..."

A) いよいよマラソン大会(たいかい)の日(ひ)だね。最後(さいご)までくじける[な]。

Iyo-iyo marason-taikai no hi da ne. Saigo made v. kujikeru [na].

The big day of the marathon is finally here. Don't give up until the end!

B) きのうの雪(ゆき)が氷(こおり)になったから危(あぶ)ないよ。転(ころ)ぶ[な]。

Kinoo no yuki ga koori ni natta kara abunai yo. v. Korobu [na].

Yesterday's snow has turned into ice, so it's dangerous. Don't fall.

8. In colloquial usage, indicates a command. Not translatable.

A) さあ、早(はや)く見(み)せ[な]。

Saa, hayaku v. mise [na].

Come on, show it (to me) already!

B) とっとと歩(ある)き[な]。

Totto to v. aruki [na].

Walk quickly!

NADO (NANKA) など(なんか)

Colloquial form "nanka なんか."

1. Used in listing examples from a category. Often in the pattern "... ya ... nado ～や～など".

English approximation: "such as ... (and ...)"

A) 小学校(しょうがっこう)や中学校(ちゅうがっこう)[など]でインフルエンサがはやっています。

ph. Shoo-gakkoo ya chuu-gakkoo [nado] de infuruenza ga hayatte-imasu.

The flu is going around in (places such as) elementary schools and junior high schools.

B) わたしは忙(いそが)しくて、洗濯(せんたく)や掃除(そうじ)[など]はつい後回(あとまわ)しにしてしまいます。

Watashi wa isogashiku te, ph. sentaku ya sooji [nado] wa tsui ato-mawashi ni shite shimai-masu.

I'm so busy, I tend to end up putting off things like laundry and house cleaning.

2. Belittles the preceding nominal or noun.

English approximation: "something (like) ..."

A) あの人(ひと)の話(はなし)[など]信用(しんよう)できるもんですか。

Ano hito no n. hanashi [nado] shinyoo dekiru mo-n desu ka.

How could you trust something that person has said!

B) だれがねたみ[など]するものですか。

Dare ga n. netami [nado] suru mono desu ka.

Who would ever be (something like) jealous!

C) 勉強が忙しくて、買い物 なんか 行けないよ。

Benkyoo ga isogashiku te, n. kaimono nanka ike nai yo.

I'm so busy with my studies, I couldn't do something like go shopping.

D) 暗くて、新聞 なんか 読めないわ。

Kuraku te, n. shinbun nanka yome-nai wa.

It's too dark, I can't read something like the newspaper.

3. Makes a sentence more indirect and vague by referring to a category rather than focusing on the specific thing mentioned.

English approximation: "like" "say"

A) あの絵 など、なかなかよくかけているね。

Ano n. e nado, naka-naka yoku kakete-iru ne.

That painting, say, is done pretty well.

B) 北海道 など はもう雪だってさ。

n. Hokkaidoo nado wa moo yuki datte sa.

They say it's already snowing in places like Hokkaido.

C) この代数の問題 なんか、簡単に解けるよ。

Kono daisuu no n. mondai nanka, kantan ni tokeru yo.

I can easily solve algebra problems like this.

D) あそこの店 なんか、いいドレスがありそうよ。

Asoko no n. mise nanka, ii doresu ga ari soo yo.

I think there will be nice dresses in a store like that one.

4. Indicates that the statement preceding it is an approximation of a statement made previously on another occasion.

English approximation: "something like ..."

A) 息子からの手紙に、日本食が恋しい [など] と書いてあったわ。

Musuko kara no tegami ni, cl. nihon-shoku ga koishii [nado] to kaite atta wa.

In the letter from my son, (he) has written something like he missed Japanese food.

B) もう決して離れない [など] と言っていたのに、半年したら別れてしまったよ、あのカップル。

cl. Moo kesshite hanare-nai [nado] to itte-ita noni, hantoshi shitara wakarete shimatta yo, ano kappuru.

Even though they had said something like they would never part, that couple broke up after half a year.

NAGARA ながら

1. Indicates that the action described by the verb it follows is being carried out at the same time another action is taking place.

English approximation: "while doing ..., (also doing ...)"

A) 彼はポテトチップスを食べ [ながら] テレビを見ている。

Kare wa poteto-chippusu o v. tabe [nagara] terebi o mite-iru.

He is eating potato chips while watching T.V.

B) 僕は音楽を聞き [ながら] ドライブをした。

Boku wa ongaku o v. kiki [nagara] doraibu o shita.

I was listening to music while I drove.

2. Shows that the second phrase describes an unexpected characteristic, considering the norm of the situation which is given in the first phrase.

English approximation: "even though"

A) 彼(かれ)は大会社(だいがいしゃ)の社長(しゃちょう)[ながら]、いつも腰(こし)の低(ひく)い人(ひと)だ。

Kare wa dai-gaisha no n. shachoo [nagara], itsumo koshi no hikui hito da.

Even though he is the president of a large company, he's always humble.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)はあんなに色々(いろいろ)苦労(くろう)し[ながら]、それを苦(く)にしていない。

Kanojo wa an-na ni iro-iro v. kuroo-shi [nagara], sore o ku ni shite-inai.

Even though she's been through a lot of hardships, she's optimistic.

NAGARA-MO ながら-も Combination particle

A combination of the particles "nagara ながら" and "mo も."

1. Like "nagara ながら" 1. above, but more emphatic.

English approximation: "even while doing ..."

A) わたしは、勉強(べんきょう)し[ながらも]、あの事件(じけん)のことが頭(あたま)から離(はな)れない。

Watashi wa v. benkyoo-shi [nagara mo], ano jiken no koto ga atama kara hanare-nai.

Even while I'm studying, I can't stop thinking about that incident.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)は、病(やまい)の床(とこ)に伏(ふ)し[ながらも]、本(ほん)を書(か)き続(つづ)けた。

Kanojo wa, yamai no toko ni v. fushi [nagara mo], hon o kaki-tsuzuketa.

Even while she was bedridden and sick, she continued to write her book.

2. See "nagara ながら" 2. above.

English approximation: "even though"

A) この料理(りょうり)は、おいしくない[ながらも]苦心(くしん)の作(さく)なんだよ。

Kono ryoori wa, adj.oishiku-nai [nagara mo] kushin no saku na-n da yo.

Even though this dish isn't very good, I did slave over it, you know.

B) あの子(こ)は、小(ちい)さい[ながらも]、両親(りょうしん)の気持(きも)ちがよくわかっている。

Ano ko wa, adj.chiisai [nagara mo], ryooshin no kimochi ga yoku wakatte-iru.

Even though that child is young, she understands her parents' feelings quite well.

NANTE なんて

Colloquial expression. Has a belittling affect on the preceding statement.

English approximation: "... or something"

A) 来週(らいしゅう)は必(かなら)ずお邪魔(じゃま)します[なんて]言(い)っていたけど、あの大工(だいく)さん、本当(ほんとう)に来(き)てくれるかしら。

cl.Raishuu wa kanarazu ojama-shi-masu [nante] itte-ita kedo, ano daiku-san, hontoo ni kite kureru kashira.

He said, "I will definitely come next week," or something, but I wonder if that carpenter is really going to come?

B) 試験(しけん)で悪(わる)い点(てん)をとったぐらいで、この世(よ)も終(お)わりだ[なんて]考(かんが)えるなよ。

Shiken de warui ten o totta gurai de, cl. kono yo mo owari da **nánte** kangaeru na yo.

Just because you got a bad grade on an exam, don't think that it's the end of the world or something.

NARI なり

1. Shows that the minute an action is completed, a change or another action occurs.

English approximation: "as soon as"

A) 彼(かれ)は、宿題(しゅくだい)を済(す)ませる**なり**遊(あそ)びに行(い)ってしまった。

Kare wa, shukudai o v. sumaseru **nari** asobi ni itte shimatta.

He went out to play as soon as he was finished with his homework.

B) 僕(ぼく)は、毎晩(まいばん)頭(あたま)を枕(まくら)につける**なり**眠(ねむ)ってしまう。

Boku wa, maiban atama o makura ni v. tsukeru **nari** nemutte shimau.

Every night, I fall asleep as soon as my head hits the pillow.

2. In the pattern "... ta nari ～たなり," shows that a state or condition is continued while another action is taking place.

English approximation: "while doing ..." "and"

A) 彼(かれ)は、靴(くつ)を履(は)いた**なり**、畳(たたみ)に上(あ)がってしまった。

Kare wa, kutsu o v. haita **nari**, tatami ni agatte shimatta.

He stepped up onto the tatami mat with his shoes on. (literally: while keeping his shoes on)

B) 彼女(かのじょ)は、アルプス登山(とざん)に出(で)かけた**なり**、ついに戻らなかった。

Kanojo wa, arupusu tozan ni v. dekaketa [nari], tsui ni modora nakatta.

She had gone to climb the Alps, and in the end, she didn't return. (i.e. the state of her having gone to the Alps continued and did not change.)

3. Casually mentions an example.

English approximation: "a ... or something"

A) たまには温泉(おんせん)へ[なり]行(い)ってみましょうよ。

Tama ni wa onsen p. e [nari] itte-mi-mashoo yo.

Why don't we go to a hot spring or something once in a while?

B) そのことならお医者(いしゃ)さんに[なり]聞(き)いてみたほうがいいよ。

Sono koto nara, oisha-san p. ni [nari] kiite mita hoo ga ii yo.

I think it's better to ask a doctor or someone about that.

4. In the pattern "... nari ... nari ～なり～なり."

English approximation: "whether or not"

A) 行(い)く[なり]行(い)かない[なり]、早(はや)く決(き)めなさい。

v. Iku [nari] v. ika-nai [nari], hayaku kime nasai.

Whether you're going to go or not, decide quickly.

B) 風邪(かぜ)を引(ひ)いたときは、ジュース[なり]水(みず)[なり]たくさん飲(の)むことです。

Kaze o hiita toki wa, n. juusu [nari] n. mizu [nari] takusan nomu koto desu.

When you have a cold, whether it's juice or water, drink plenty (of it).

C) 町(まち)から遠(とお)いところに住(す)むのだから、大(だい)[なり]小(しょう)[なり]の不便(ふべん)はあるだ

ろう。

Machi kara tooi tokoro ni sumu no dakara, n. dai [nari] n. shoo [nari] no fuben wa aru daroo.

Since (we) are going to live far away from town, there will probably be inconveniences, whether they be major or minor.

N-DE　ん-で　Combination particle

A combination of the negative form "(mase)n (ませ)ん" of the form "masu ます" and the particle "de で." A colloquial, polite expression.

1. In a negation.

English approximation: "not having done ..."

A) ご病気(びょうき)と伺(うかが)いながらお見舞(みま)いにも上(あ)がりませ[んで]、失礼(しつれい)いたしました。

Gobyooki to ukagai nagara omimai ni mo v. agari-mase [n de], shitsuree itashi-mashita.

Please excuse me for not having paid a visit even though I had heard you were ill.

B) お電話(でんわ)をいただきながらすぐにお返事(へんじ)もしませ[んで]、申(もう)し訳(わけ)ありませんでした。

Odenwa o itadaki nagara sugu ni ohenji mo v. shi-mase [n de], mooshiwake-arimasen deshita.

I'm sorry for not having returned your call immediately.

2. Similar to the function in 1. above, but with an implied apology.

English approximation: "(I'm sorry that I) did not do ..., but ..."

A) せっかくいらしてくださいましたのに、お茶も差し上げませ[んで]。

Sekkaku irashite kudasai-mashita no ni, ocha mo v. sashi-age-mase [n de].

Even though you had come (out of your way) for a visit, I didn't even offer you tea ...

B) わざわざお出でくださいましたのに、主人は出張中でお目にかかれませ[んで]。

Waza-waza oide kudasai-mashita no ni, shujin wa shucchoo-chuu de v. ome ni kakare-mase [n de].

Despite the fact that you came all this way (from afar), my husband is on a business trip and you didn't get to meet him ...

NE(NEE) ね(ねえ)

"Ne ね" and "nee ねえ" are used in almost the same way, but "nee ねえ" implies even more emotion.

1. Expresses a casual exclamation. Not translatable.

   A) まあ、バイオリンが上手に弾けるの[ね(ねえ)]。

   Maa, baiorin ga joozu ni hikeru p. no [ne(nee)].

   My goodness, how well you play the violin!

   B) 立派なお宅にお住まいでいらっしゃいます[ね(ねえ)]。

   Rippana otaku ni osumai de v. irasshai-masu [ne(nee)].

   What a nice house you live in!

2. Makes a casual gesture of confirmation.

English approximation: "..., right?"

A) 今(いま)わたしが言(い)ったこと、よくわからなかったみたい ね 。

Ima watashi ga itta koto, yoku wakara-nakatta $_{n.}$ mitai ne .

You don't seem to have understood what I said just now, right?

B) これはやはり本物(ほんもの)ではないようです ね 。

Kore wa yahari honmono de wa nai yoo $_{c.}$ desu ne .

It indeed seems like this is not authentic, right?

3. Expresses a desire to elicit an agreement from the party addressed.

English approximation: "..., okay?"

A) わかったから、もう泣(な)かないで ね 。

Wakatta kara, moo $_{v.}$ naka-nai de ne .

I understand, so please don't cry anymore, okay?

B) 許(ゆる)してください ね 。もう二度(にど)とご心配(しんぱい)をおかけしませんから。

$_{cl.}$ Yurushite kudasai ne . Moo nido to goshinpai o okake shi-masen kara.

Please forgive me, (all right)? I'll never make you worry again.

4. Often following a phrase with an interrogative pronoun, softens the posed question. Not translatable.

A) アメリカに旅行(りょこう)したのは、いつだったっけ ね(ねえ) 。

Amerika ni ryokoo-shita no wa, $_{cl.}$ itsu datta-kke ne(nee) .

When was it that we went on a trip to the U.S.?

B) 君(きみ)の故郷(こきょう)はどこか ね 。

Kimi no kokyoo wa $_{ph.}$ doko ka ne ?

Where are you originally from?

5. Placed at the end of a phrase, as a meaningless particle used just to set a rhythm. Not translatable.

A) 五合目まで車で行って、それから ね(ねえ)、その先は歩いて頂上まで登ったよ。

Gogoo-me made kuruma de itte, conj.sore kara ne(nee), sono saki wa aruite choojoo made nobotta yo.

We drove to the half way point, and then after that, we walked all the way up to the peak of the mountain.

B) あたし ね(ねえ)、今日かけっこで一等になったのよ。

n.Atashi ne(nee), kyoo kakekko de it-too ni natta no yo.

I came in first in a running race today.

6. Same as 5, but in the set phrases "anone あのね" and "da ne/desu ne だね／ですね."

English approximation: various translations, depending on the circumstances.

A) あの ね(ねえ)、今晩僕のほうからまた電話するよ。

interj.Ano ne(nee), konban boku no hoo kara mata denwa-suru yo.

Listen, I'll call you again this evening.

B) そうだ ね(ねえ)、もう一年前になるんだ、卒業したのは。

cl.Soo da ne(nee), moo ichi-nen mae ni naru-n da, sotsugyoo-shita no wa.

Yeah, you're right, it's been a year already since I graduated.

NI に

FUNDAMENTALS OF "NI に"

Precedes verbs which indicate the existence of people or things in a certain place, or which show direction, movement or action. In the latter case, it is interchangeable with the particle "e へ" (see p. 30).

1. After a noun or a nominal.

1) Placed after a noun or a nominal, it shows that the noun/nominal is the place in which the subject of the sentence exists.

English approximation: "at" "in" "on"

Some of the verbs that often follow "ni に" are:

aru ある (to be, to be present, to exist)—used for inanimate objects.

iru いる (to be, to be present, to exist)—used for animate things.

kurasu 暮らす (to live, to get along)

nezasu 根ざす (to stem from)

nokoru 残る (to remain, to stay behind)

ochitsuku 落ち着く (to settle down)

sumu 住む (to live)

tomaru 泊まる (to stay over)

tsutomeru 勤める (to work at)

ukabu 浮かぶ (to float)

yokotawaru 横たわる (to lie down)

A) 机の上[に]本があります。

Tsukue no $_{n.}$ue [ni] hon ga ari-masu.

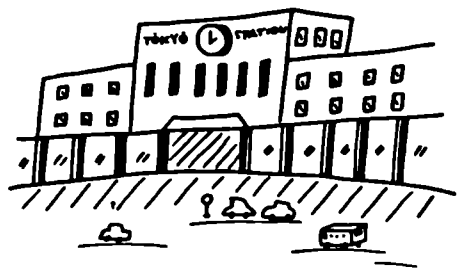
There is a book on the desk.

B) わたし達は東京駅の近く[に]住んでいます。

Watashi-tachi wa tookyoo-eki no

n. chikaku [ni] sunde-imasu.

We live in a place near Tokyo Station.

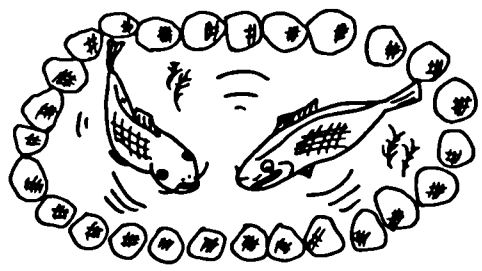


C) 見てごらん、この池[に]コイがたくさんいるよ。

Mite goran, kono n. ike [ni] koi ga

takusan iru yo.

Look, there are many carp in this pond.



D) 大昔、火星[に]水があったそうだ。

Oo-mukashi, n. kasee [ni] mizu ga atta soo da.

They say that a long time ago, there was water on Mars.

E) あなたはどこ[に]お勤めですか？

Anata wa n. doko [ni] otsutome desu ka?

Where do you work? (literally: Which place are you working at?)

F) 道[に]雪がたくさん残っています。

n. Michi [ni] yuki ga takusan nokotte-imaṣu.

There is a lot of snow left on the street.

G) あそこ[に]立っている男の人は今川さんです。

n. Asoko [ni] tatte-iru otoko no hito

wa imagawa-san desu.

The man standing over there (literally:

at that place) is Mr. Imagawa.

H) あの壁(かべ)[に]かかっている絵(え)はきれいですね。

Ano $_{n.}$kabe [ni] kakatte-iru e wa kiree desu ne.

The painting hanging on that wall is beautiful.

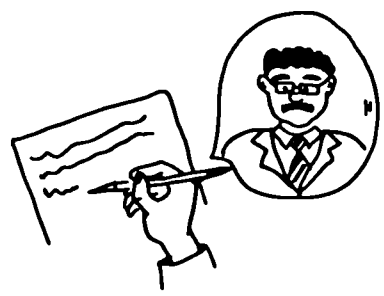
2) After a noun, indicates the direction or the destination of an action.

English approximation: "to" "in" "on" "into"

A) 僕(ぼく)はお父(とう)さん[に]手紙(てがみ)を書(か)いた。

Boku wa $_{n.}$otoosan [ni] tegami o kaita.

I wrote a letter to my father.



B) わたしは来月(らいげつ)イギリス[に]行(い)きます。

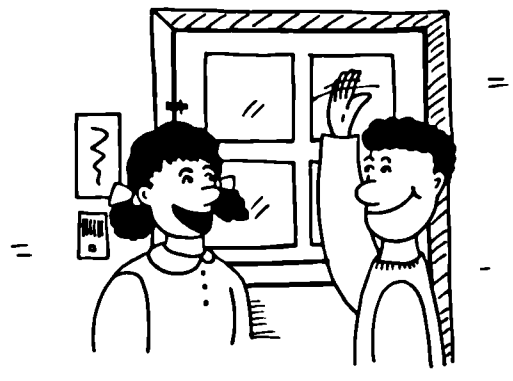
Watashi wa raigetsu $_{n.}$igirisu [ni] iki-masu.

I am going to England next month.

C) 僕(ぼく)がうち[に]帰(かえ)ったとき、妹(いもうと)も学校(がっこう)から帰(かえ)ってきた。

Boku ga $_{n.}$uchi [ni] kaetta toki, imooto mo gakkoo kara kaette-kita.

When I got home, my sister was also coming home from school.



D) 父(ちち)は会社(かいしゃ)[に]出(で)かけました。

Chichi wa $_{n.}$kaisha [ni] dekake-mashita.

My father has left for his office.

E) 景色(けしき)のいい所(ところ)[に]旅行(りょこう)したいね。

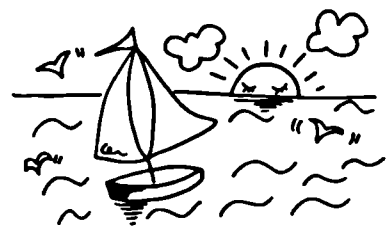
Keshiki no ii $_{n.}$tokoro [ni] ryokoo-shi-tai ne.

Don't you want to travel to a place with nice scenery?

F) 太陽(たいよう)は西(にし)[に]沈(しず)みます。

Taiyoo wa n. nishi [ni] shizumi-masu.

The sun sets in the west.



G) さあ、飛行機(ひこうき)[に]乗(の)る時間(じかん)ですよ。

Saa, n. hikooki [ni] noru jikan desu yo.

It's time to get on the plane now.

3) After an abstract condition or state, indicates that the action prescribed by a related verb is proceeding toward it.

English approximation: "to" or not translatable.

A) 来月(らいげつ)スキー[に]行(い)きませんか？

Raigetsu n. sukii [ni] iki-masen ka?

Would you like to go skiing next month?

B) 彼(かれ)らは恋(こい)[に]おちた。

Karera wa n. koi [ni] ochita.

They fell in love.

C) 森田氏(もりたし)は政界(せいかい)[に]入(はい)った。

Morita-shi wa n. seekai [ni] haitta.

Mr. Morita joined the political circle.

D) あなたはもう投票(とうひょう)[に]行(い)きましたか？

Anata wa moo n. toohyoo [ni] iki-mashita ka?

Have you already gone to vote?

E) わたしは午後会議 [に] 出ます。

Watashi wa gogo n. kaigi [ni] de-masu.

I'm going to attend a meeting this afternoon.

4) In the pattern "... ni naru (nari-masu) ～になる (なります)" or "... ni kawaru (kawari-masu) ～に変る (変ります)," indicates a change in condition/state.

English approximation: "(turn) into"

A) 信号が青 [に] なりました。さあ、渡りましょう。

Shingoo ga n. ao [ni] nari-mashita. Saa, watari-mashoo.

The traffic light has turned green. Let's cross the street.

B) もう秋 [に] なりましたね。

Moo n. aki [ni] nari-mashita ne.

It's become autumn, hasn't it?

C) わたしの祖母は九十歳 [に] なりました。

Watashi no sobo wa n. kyuujus-sai [ni] nari-mashita.

My grandmother has turned ninety.

D) 山上君はカメラマン [に] なった。

Yamagami-kun wa n. kameraman [ni] natta.

Yamagami became a photographer.

E) 前は薬屋だったあの店はメガネ屋 [に] 変わった。

Mae wa kusuri-ya datta ano mise wa n. megane-ya [ni] kawatta.

That store which used to be a pharmacy is now an optician's.

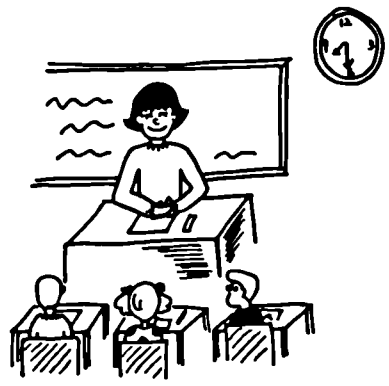
5) Indicates the time that an action takes/took place.

English approximation: “on” “in” “at”

A) 学校(がっこう)は毎朝(まいあさ)八時半(はちじはん)[に]始(はじ)まります。

Gakkoo wa mainichi n. hachi-ji han [ni] hajimari-masu.

School starts at eight thirty every morning.



B) わたしは夕方(ゆうがた)七時(しちじ)[に]帰(かえ)ります。

Watashi wa yuugata n. shichi-ji [ni] kaeri-masu.

I'll be going home/coming home at seven in the evening.

C) わたしは休憩時間(きゅうけいじかん)[に]コーヒーを飲(の)みました。

Watashi wa n. kyuukee-jikan [ni]

koohii o nomi-mashita.

I had coffee during the break.

D) 僕(ぼく)は来週(らいしゅう)の金曜日(きんようび)にコンサート[に]行(い)きます。

Boku wa raishuu no kin-yoobi ni n. konsaato [ni] iki-masu.

I'm going to a concert next Friday.

E) わたしの母(はは)は二十歳(はたち)の時(とき)[に]結婚(けっこん)した。

Watashi no haha wa hatachi no n. toki [ni] kekkon-shita.

My mother got married at age twenty.

F) 稲妻(いなづま)が光(ひか)ると同時(どうじ)[に]雷鳴(らいめい)がとどろきました。

Inazuma ga hikaru to n. dooji [ni] raimee ga todoroki-mashita.

Lightening flashed, and at the same time, there was a roll of thunder.

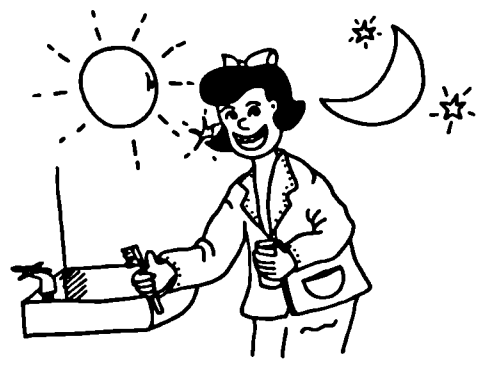
6) Indicates a rate, proportion, frequency or interval of time or space.

English approximation: "at" "to" "in" "for" "per"

A) わたしは、朝(あさ)と晩(ばん)、一日(いちにち)[に]二回(にかい)歯(は)を磨(みが)きます。

Watashi wa, asa to ban, n. ichi-nichi [ni] ni-kai ha o migaki-masu.

I brush my teeth twice a day in the morning and in the evening.



B) 山手線(やまのてせん)の電車(でんしゃ)は五分(ごふん)おき[に]来(き)ます。

Yamanote-sen no densha wa n. go-fun oki [ni] ki-masu.

Yamanote line trains come every five minutes.

C) この写真(しゃしん)のサイズは、縦(たて)八(はっ)センチ[に]横(よこ)一三(じゅうさん)センチです。

Kono shashin no saizu wa, tate n. has-senchi [ni] yoko juusan-senchi desu.

The size of this photograph is eight centimeters by thirteen centimeters.

D) テスト用紙(ようし)は一人(ひとり)[に]一枚(いちまい)ずつです。

Tesuto-yooshi wa n. hitori [ni] ichi-mai zutsu desu.

The exam should be one page per person.

E) 一度(いちど)[に]全部(ぜんぶ)食(た)べないで、少(すこ)しずつお上(あ)がりなさい。

n. Ichi-do [ni] zenbu tabe-nai de, sukoshi zutsu oagari nasai.

Don't eat it all at one time; eat it a little bit at a time.

F) 千円(せんえん)[に]ついて五十円(ごじゅうえん)の手数料(てすうりょう)がかかります。

n. Sen en [ni] tsuite go-juu en no tesuuryoo ga kakari-masu.

There is a fifty yen handling fee per every one thousand yen.

7) Shows that someone is involved in or influenced by an action or a condition.

English approximation: "from" "with"

A) わたしたちは、今(いま)エレクトロニクスの研究(けんきゅう)[に]取(と)り組(く)んでいます。

Watashi-tachi wa, ima erekutoronikusu no n. kenkyuu [ni] tori-kunde-imasu.

We are now working on a research in electronics.

B) 彼(かれ)は空手(からて)のけいこ[に]夢中(むちゅう)です。

Kare wa karate no n. keeko [ni] muchuu desu.

He's obsessed with karate practice.

C) わたしは寒(さむ)さ[に]震(ふる)えた。

Watashi wa n. samusa [ni] furueta.

I shivered from the cold.

D) 僕(ぼく)は高熱(こうねつ)[に]苦(くる)しんだ。

Boku wa n. koonetsu [ni] kurushinda.

I suffered from a high fever.

8) Shows the intention or purpose of the action.

English approximation: "as a token of" "as" "for" "by way of"

A) 僕(ぼく)、おじいちゃんからお年玉(としだま)[に]二千円(にせんえん)もらったよ。

Boku, ojiichan kara n. otoshidama [ni] ni-sen en moratta yo.

I was given two thousand yen by grandpa as a New Year's gift.

B) わたし達(たち)は、ハネムーン[に]ハワイへ行(い)きました。

Watashi-tachi wa, n. hanemuun [ni] hawai e iki-mashita.

We went to Hawaii for our honeymoon.

C) いろいろお世話(せわ)になりました。つまらないものですが、どうぞお礼[に]これをお受(う)け取(と)りください。

Iro-iro osewa ni nari-mashita. Tsumaranai mono desu ga, doozo n. oree [ni] kore o ouketori kudasai.

Thank you for everything. This isn't much, but please accept this as a token of my appreciation.

9) Placed after a noun, lists a number of things. Interchangeable with the particle "toと," but "ni に" implies an additive sense.

English approximation: "and" "with"

A) わたしはフライドチキン[に]ハンバーガーがいいわ。

Watashi wa n. furaidochikin [ni] hanbaagaa ga ii wa.

I want some fried chicken and a hamburger.

B) 村祭(むらまつ)りは、子供(こども)[に]若(わか)い人(ひと)[に]お年寄(としよ)りと、総出(そうで)でにぎわった。

Mura-matsuri wa, n. kodomo [ni] wakai n. hito [ni] otoshiyori to, soode de nigiwatta.

Everyone from the village gathered and enjoyed the festival, (including) children, youngsters and the elders.

C) 今日(きょう)のパーティー、スカート[に]ブラウスでいいかしら。

Kyoo no paatii, n. sukaato [ni] burausu de ii kashira.

For today's party, do you think a blouse and a skirt are appropriate?

10) Shows the speaker's respect toward the party addressed. Not translatable.

A) ご主人様(しゅじんさま)[に]もお元気(げんき)でいらっしゃることと思(おも)います。

n. Goshujin-sama [ni] mo ogenki de irassharu koto to omoimasu.

I hope your husband, too, is well.

B) 首相(しゅしょう)[に]は、来月(らいげつ)アメリカを訪問(ほうもん)されるそうです。

n. Shushoo [ni] wa, raigetsu amerika o hoomon-sareru soo desu.

The Prime Minister is supposed to make a visit to the U.S. next month.

11) Shows that something is/was done by/through a measure described by the preceding noun. Often in the patterns "... ni yotte ～によって (... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで)."

English approximation: "by" "at" "according to" "from" "due to"

A) 聞(き)くところ[に]よれば、新(あたら)しいハイウェイがこの町(まち)を通(とお)るそうだ。

Kiku n tokoro [ni] yore ba, atarashii haiuee ga kono machi o tooru soo da.

According to what I've heard, a new highway is supposed to be built through this town.

B) 不注意(ふちゅうい)[に]より、友達(ともだち)から借(か)りた本(ほん)を汚(よご)してしまった。

n. Fuchuui [ni] yori, tomodachi kara karita hon o yogoshite shimatta.

Due to (my) carelessness, I've soiled the book I borrowed from my friend.

C) 最近(さいきん)の研究(けんきゅう)[に]よれば、銀河(ぎんが)の中心(ちゅうしん)にはブラックホールがあるということだ。

Saikin no n. kenkyuu [ni] yore ba, ginga no chuushin ni wa burakku-hooru ga aru to yuu koto da.

According to recent studies, there is a black hole in the very center of our Milky Way.

12) Placed between two nouns, creates a pair.

English approximation: "and" "in addition"

A) 新郎(しんろう)[に]新婦(しんぷ)

n. shinroo [ni] n. shinpu

A bridegroom and a bride

B) 鬼(おに)[に]金棒(かなぼう)

n. oni [ni] n. kanaboo (proverb)

A demon and a metal club. (i.e. the metal club gives the demon, already a strong being, additional strength.)

2. Placed after a verb.

1) Indicates the purpose of an action. Most frequently used before the verbs "iku 行(い)く (to go)" and "kuru 来(く)る (to come)," and related verbs such as "mukau 向(む)かう (to head for)," "shuppatsu-suru 出発(しゅっぱつ)する (to

depart),” “kaeru 帰る (to return)” and “modoru 戻る (to come back).”

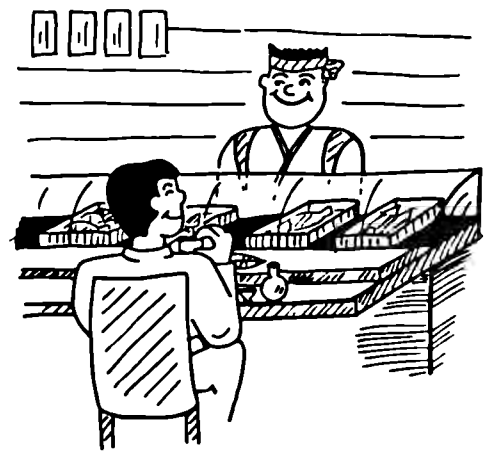
English approximation: “to do ...” “in order to do ...”

A) わたしはすし屋へおすしを食べ[に]行きます。

Watashi wa sushi-ya e osushi o

v. tabe [ni] iki-masu.

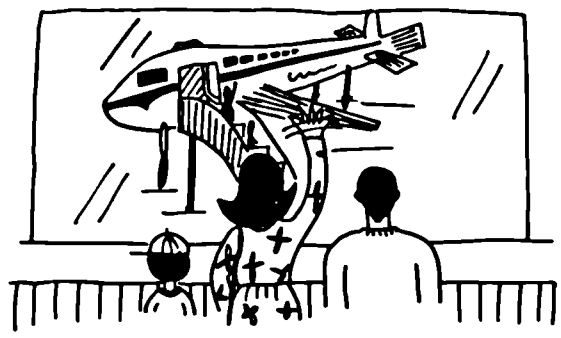
I go to a restaurant to eat sushi.



B) わたしは友達を迎え[に]空港へ行きました。

Watashi wa tomodachi o v. mukae [ni] kuukoo e iki-mashita.

I went to the airport to pick up my friend.



C) 宿題を忘れたので、うちへ（宿題を）取り[に]戻った。

Shukudai o wasureta node, uchi e (shukudai o) v. tori [ni] modotta.

As I had forgotten to take my homework with me, I went back home to get it.

D) 俊男、お友達が遊び[に]来ましたよ。

Toshio, otomodachi ga v. asobi [ni] ki-mashita yo.

Toshio, your friends are here to play with you.

2) In a pattern where the same verb is repeated with "ni に" in between, intensifies the degree of the action.

English approximation: "... and ..."

A) 今日(きょう)は待(ま)ち[に]待(ま)った遠足(えんそく)の日(ひ)です。

Kyoo wa v. machi [ni] matta ensoku no hi desu.

Today is the day of school trip that I've been really looking forward to.

B) その知(し)らせを聞(き)いて、彼女(かのじょ)は泣(な)き[に]泣(な)いた。

Sono shirase o kiite, kanojo wa v. naki [ni] naita.

Hearing the news, she just cried and cried.

3) When the verb is in passive form, "reru れる" or "rareruられる," the particle "ni に" is placed after the agent of the action.

English approximation: "by"

A) わたしはすり[に]財布(さいふ)をすられた。

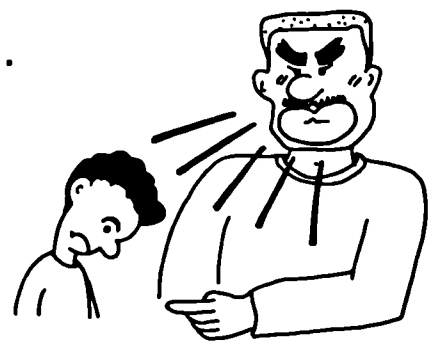
Watashi wa n. suri [ni] saifu o su-rareta.

I was robbed of my wallet by a pickpocket.

B) 僕(ぼく)は父(ちち)[に]しかられた。

Boku wa n. chichi [ni] shika-rareta.

I was scolded by my father.



D) わたしは車(くるま)[に]泥(どろ)をはねられた。

Watashi wa n. kuruma [ni] doro o hane-rareta.

I was splashed with mud by a car.

3. Makes the preceding noun an indirect object. It is placed after the indirect object and before the direct object.

English approximation: "to"

A) (わたし[に])あなたの写真(しゃしん)を見(み)せてください。

(n. Watashi [ni]) anata no shasihn o misete kudasai.
indirect object — direct object

Please show me your picture.

B) 妹(いもうと)はわたし[に]誕生日(たんじょうび)のプレゼントをくれました。

Imooto wa n. watashi [ni] tanjoobi no purezento o kure-mashita.
indirect object — direct object

My sister gave me a birthday present.

C) わたしは彼女(かのじょ)[に]フランス語(ご)を教(おし)えた。

Watashi wa n. kanojo [ni] furansu-go o oshieta.
indirect object — indirect object

I taught her French.

4. In relation to the verb form:

In a sentence where the verb follows the pattern "... te morau (... te morai-masu) ～てもらう(～てもらいます)," the particle "ni に" identifies the preceding noun as the agent or the source of an action which was requested by the speaker.

English approximation: (receive favor from ... by request)

A) わたしは梅田先生[に]ピアノを教えてもらいました。

Watashi wa n. umeda-sensee (agent) [ni] piano o oshiete-morai-mashita.

I received piano lessons from Mrs. Umeda.

B) わたしは母[に]サンドイッチを作ってもらった。

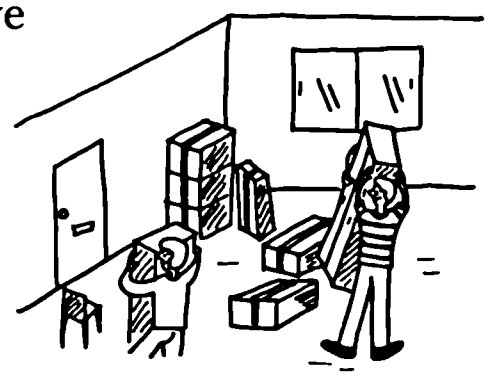
Watashi wa n. haha (agent) [ni] sandoicchi o tsukutte-moratta.

My mother made sandwiches for me (at my request).

C) 友達[に]引っ越しの手伝いに来てもらった。

n. Tomodachi (agent) [ni] hikkoshi no tetsudai ni kite-moratta.

My friends came over to help me move (at my request).



5. Placed after mimesis, creates an adverb that modifies the verb in the predicate. Not translatable.

A) 雨がひどくて、びしょびしょ[に]濡れてしまった。

Ame ga hidoku te, m. bisho-bisho [ni] nurete shimatta.

As it was raining hard, I got thoroughly soaked.

B) このパン、からから[に]乾いているね。

Kono pan, m. kara-kara [ni] kawaite-iru ne.

This bread is dried stiff.

6. In the pattern "... ni wa ... keredo(ga) ～には～けれど(が)," placed after an adjective or a verb. Used in admitting something with a certain degree of reservation.

English approximation: "it is certain that ..., but"

A) あのレストランの料理(りょうり)は、おいしい[に]はおいしいけれど、ちょっと高(たか)いね。

Ano resutoran no ryoori wa, adj. oishii [ni] wa oishii keredo, chotto takai ne.

The food at that restaurant is good, all right, but it's a bit expensive, don't you think.

B) 返事(へんじ)、する[に]はするけど、もう少(すこ)し待(ま)ってね。

Henji, v. suru [ni] wa surukedo, moo sukoshi matte ne?

I'll give you the answer, certainly, but could you wait a little longer?

7. After a short introductory remark before the main sentence, makes the verb into a present participle ("ing") form.

English approximation: "...-ing"

A) 今思(いまおも)う[に]、わたしはあの時(とき)は少(すこ)し努力(どりょく)が足(た)りなかった。

Ima v. omou [ni], watashi wa ano toki wa sukoshi doryoku ga tari-nakatta.

Thinking back on it now, I didn't make enough of an effort at that time.

B) 考(かんが)えてみる[に]、これ以上(いじょう)の要求(ようきゅう)は無理(むり)だろう。

Kangaete v. miru [ni], kore ijoo no yookyuu wa muri daroo.

In thinking about it, I don't think it's possible to make any further demands.

8. In the patterns "... deshoo ni ～でしょうに," "... de aroo ni ～であろうに," "... daroo ni ～だろうに," "... deshita deshoo ni ～でしたでしょうに," "... datta deshoo ni ～だったでしょうに," "... datta roo ni ～だったろうに." Expresses one's sympathy or regret. Often placed at the end of a sentence.

English approximation: "I suppose ..." "I regret ..." "I sympathize ..."

A) 恋人(こいびと)もいるだろう[に]、若(わか)い命(いのち)を失(うしな)うとは。

Koibito mo iru c. daroo [ni], wakai inochi o ushinau to wa.

He must have a sweetheart, what a pity that he lost his life so young.

B) ひどいお天気(てんき)だったでしょう[に]。よく帰(かえ)れたこと。

Hidoi otenki datta c. deshoo [ni]. Yoku kaereta koto.

The weather must have been terrible. It's a wonder you managed to come home.

C) そんなに休(やす)まず働(はたら)いて、さぞ疲(つか)れただろう[に]。

Son-na ni yasumazu hataraite, sazo tsukareta c. daroo [ni].

You have been working so hard without a break, how tired you must be.

D) こんな点数(てんすう)しかとれなかったか。もっと勉強(べんきょう)しておけばよかっただろう[に]。

Kon-na tensuu shika tore-nakatta ka. Motto benkyoo shite okeba yokatta c. daroo [ni].

You only managed to get a low grade. You should have worked harder.

NI-MO　に-も　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ni に" and "mo も."

1. Indicates that there is something additional or surpassing the norm.

English approximation: "even" "also"

A) 彼女(かのじょ)は、昼休(ひるやす)み [にも] 仕事(しごと)をしている。

Kanojo wa, n. hiru-yasumi [ni mo] shigoto o shite-iru.

She is doing work even during her lunch break.

B) わたしは、アフリカ [にも] 行(い)ったことがあります。

Watashi wa, n. afurika [ni mo] itta koto ga ari-masu.

I have also been to Africa.

C) そのお菓子(かし)、僕(ぼく) [にも] ちょうだい。

Sono okashi, n. boku [ni mo] choodai.

Please (can you) give me some of those candies, too?

2. In an honorific usage, follows the subject. Not translatable.

A) 先生(せんせい) [にも] お元気(げんき)のことと思(おも)います。

n. Sensee [ni mo] ogenki no koto to omoi-masu.

I presume that you (sir) are fine.

B) お宅(たく)の皆様(みなさま) [にも] お変(か)わりはございませんか？

Otaku no n. minasama [ni mo] okawari wa gozaimasen ka?

How is your family? (literally: There are no changes concerning your family?)

3. In the pattern "(verb) ni mo に も (verb) zu/nai ず/ない," where one verb is repeated twice and followed by a negation, indicates that the action described by the verb is impossible or difficult to carry out.

English approximation: "cannot do ... even if (I) were to try"

A) 慌てて、着物を着たまま水に飛び込んでしまい、泳ぐ[にも]泳げませんでした。

Awatete kimono o kita mama mizu ni tobikonde shimai, v. oyogu [ni mo] oyoge-masen deshita.

I jumped into the water in my clothes in a panic, and I couldn't swim even if I tried.

B) こんなに部屋を散らかして、歩く[にも]歩けないじゃないの。

Kon-na ni heya o chirakashite, v. aruku [ni mo] aruke-nai ja nai no.

Your room is such a mess, I couldn't walk in even if I were to try.

NI-MO-KAKAWARA-ZU　に-も-かかわら-ず

Combination particle

A combination of "ni に, mo も, zu ず" and the verb "kakawaru かかわる (to relate)."

1. Shows that an actual situation is the opposite of what is expected.

English approximation: "even though"

A) 間に合うように駅に着いた[にもかかわらず]、電車はもう出てしまった後だった。

Maniau yoo ni eki ni v. tsuita [ni mo kakawarazu], densha wa moo dete shimatta ato datta.

Even though I had gotten to the station so that I would be on time, it was after the train had already left.

B) 今日は晴れている[にもかかわらず]、スモッグで空は灰色です。

Kyoo wa v. harete-iru ni mo kakawara zu, sumoggu de sora wa haiiro desu.

Even though it's a clear day today, the sky is gray because of smog.

2. A shortened form of "sore ni mo kakawara zu それにもかかわらず." Placed at the beginning of a sentence as a conjunction, showing that despite the previous sentence, an unexpected situation exists/existed.

English approximation: "despite that fact,"

A) 彼(かれ)が勉強(べんきょう)しているのを見(み)たことがない。にもかかわらず、成績(せいせき)はいつもトップだ。

Kare ga benkyoo-shite-iru no o mita koto ga nai. Ni mo kakawara zu, seeseki wa itsumo toppu da.

I've never seen him study. Despite that fact, his grades are always at the top (of the class).

B) 今日(きょう)はひどい暑(あつ)さだ。にもかかわらず、あのおばあさんは冬(ふゆ)のコートを着(き)ている。

Kyoo wa hidoi atsusa da. Ni mo kakawara zu, ano obaasan wa fuyu no kooto o kite-iru.

It's extremely hot today. Despite that fact, that old lady is wearing a winter coat.

NI-OI-TE　に-おい-て　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ni に" and "oite おいて," the gerund of the verb "oku おく (to place)."

1. Marks the place or time in which an action takes place.

English approximation: "in"

A) 一九九二年のオリンピックはバルセロナ[において]行われます。

Sen kyuu-hyaku kyuu-juu-ni nen no orinpikku wa n. baruserona [ni oite] okonaware-masu.

The 1992 Olympics will be held in Barcelona.

B) 十八世紀[において]活躍した作曲家にモーツァルトがいます。

n. Juuhas-seeki [ni oite] katsuyaku-shita sakkyoku-ka ni moo-tsaruto ga i-masu.

Mozart is among the composers who were active in the eighteenth century.

2. Indicates the field of activity.

English approximation: "concerning" "in the field of "

A) 彼は、アメリカにいる間に、経済学[において]優れた研究をした。

Kare wa, amerika ni iru aida ni, n. keezaigaku [ni oite] sugureta kenkyuu o shita.

When he was in the U.S., he conducted some outstanding research in the field of economics.

B) 絵画[において]も、音楽[において]も、彼女より才能に恵まれた人はあまりいない。

n. Kaiga [ni oite] mo, n. ongaku [ni oite] mo, kanojo yori sainoo ni megumareta hito wa amari i-nai.

In the fields of both art and music, there aren't too many others who are more talented than she.

NI-SHITE　に-して　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "ni に" and "shite して," the gerund of the verb "suru する (to do)." Indicates a time, a place or a condition.

English approximation: "while" "at"

A) 彼(かれ)は旅行中(りょこうちゅう)[にして]、病(やまい)に倒(たお)れた。

Kare wa n. ryokoo-chuu [ni shite], yamai ni taoreta.

While he was on a trip, he was stricken with an illness.

B) あのピアニストは百歳(ひゃくさい)[にして]、来月(らいげつ)またリサイタルをするそうです。

Ano pianisuto wa n. hyaku-sai [ni shite], raigetsu mata risaitaru o suru soo desu.

That pianist, at age one hundred, will be holding another recital next month, I hear.

NI-SHITE-MO　に-して-も　Combination particle

A combination of the particle "ni に," "shiteして," the gerund of the verb "suru する (to do)," and the particle "moも." Gives a hypothetical situation as a condition for the clause that follows.

English approximation: "(even) if (you) were to do ..."

A) 子供(こども)をしかる[にしても]、自分(じぶん)の感情(かんじょう)だけでしかってはいけない。

Kodomo o v. shikaru [ni shite mo], jibun no kanjoo dake de shikatte wa ike-nai.

If you were to scold a child, you should not scold her/him just based

on your emotions.

B) 今(いま)まで充分練習(じゅうぶんれんしゅう)したと思(おも)っている[にしても]、試合(しあい)の日(ひ)まで練習(れんしゅう)を怠(なま)けてはいけない。

Ima made juubun renshuu-shita to v. omotte-iru [ni shite mo], shiai no hi made renshuu o namakete wa ike-nai.

Even if you think that (you) have practiced enough by now, (you) must not skip any practices until the day of the match.

NI-SHITE-WA　に-して-は　Combination particle

A combination of the particle "ni に," "shite して," the gerund of the verb "suru する (to do)," and the particle "wa は."

Shows that a result has surpassed what is usually expected from an individual or a category.

English approximation: "for"

A) 君(きみ)[にしては]まあよく歌(うた)えたよ。

For you, you sang pretty well. (i.e. That's pretty good, considering your usual performance.)

B) 冬(ふゆ)[にしては]、この二三日(にさんにち)割合(わりあい)に暖(あたた)かいね。

n. Fuyu [ni shite wa], kono ni-san-nichi wariai ni atatakai ne.

For winter, these past two or three days have been relatively warm, haven't they?

NITE にて

Equivalent to "de で." (See p. 17.)

1. Placed after a noun of location, indicates it is where an action takes/took place. Often in the patterns "kore nite これにて" and "koko nite ここにて," used in more formal speech.

English approximation: "at" "with" "in"

A) 次(つぎ)の物理学会(ぶつりがっかい)は、広島(ひろしま)[にて]開催(かいさい)されます。

Tsugi no butsuri-gakkai wa, n. hiroshima [nite] kaisai sare-masu.

The next physics conference will be held in Hiroshima.

B) 今日(きょう)の遠足(えんそく)はここ[にて]解散(かいさん)します。

Kyoo no ensoku wa n. koko [nite] kaisan shi-masu.

Today's school trip will be dismissed at this point.

C) 今学期(こんがっき)はこれ[にて]おしまいにします。

Kon-gakki wa n. kore [nite] oshimai ni shi-masu.

With this, I conclude this semester.

2. Indicates a reason or motive for an action or occurrence.

English approximation: "due to ..." "owing to ..."

A) きのうは、風邪(かぜ)[にて]欠席(けっせき)いたしました。

Kinoo wa n. kaze [nite] kesseki itashi-mashita.

I was absent yesterday due to a cold.

B) 私(わたくし)の不注意(ふちゅうい)[にて]申(もう)しわけありませんでした。

Watakushi no n. fuchuui [nite] mooshiwake-arimasen deshita.

I'm sorry, it was due to my carelessness.

NO(N)　の(ん)

FUNDAMENTALS OF "NO の"

"No の" basically transforms a noun into a possessive. It functions like the " 's" in English. Placed between two nouns, the first noun together with the particle "no の" modifies the second. For example:

お父(とう)さん[の]本(ほん)	お父(とう)さん[の]本(ほん)
otoosan [no] hon	otoosan [no] hon
my father ['s] book	the book [of] my father

In Japanese, personal pronouns such as "watashi わたし," "anata あなた," "kanojo 彼女(かのじょ)," etc. do not have cases, as in English. Particles must be attached in order to indicate the case of a personal pronoun. Examples with "no の" are: "watashi no わたしの (my),""anata no あなたの (your)," "kanojo no かのじょの (her)," etc., which are the genitive (possessive) case.

The particle "no の" is also used as an indefinite pronoun that is not followed by another noun. Compare:

わたし[の]本(ほん)	わたし[の]
watashi [no] hon	watashi [no]
my book	mine
安(やす)いリンゴ	やすい[の]
yasui ringo	yasui [no]
an inexpensive apple	(an) inexpensive one

わたしが買った本	わたしが買った の
watashi ga katta hon	watashi ga katta no
the book I bought	the one I bought

The following is an example of an exaggerated phrase with eight "no の" used to indicate the location of a book :

あそこ の 本棚 の 上 の 棚 の 右 の 方 の 大きい字引

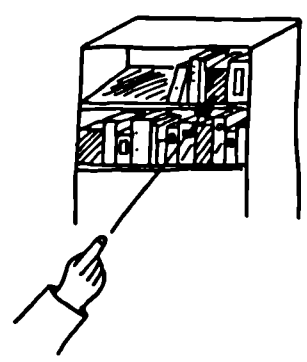
asoko no hondana no ue no tana no migi no hoo no ookii jibiki

over there book shelves up shelf right toward big dictionary

の 隣 の 本

no tonari no hon

next book



The book next to the big dictionary on the right side of the upper shelf of the book shelves over there.

As you can see, all of the preceding words modify the last word, "hon 本." In translating this phrase into English, you must begin with "hon 本" and proceed backwards all the way to "asoko あそこ."

1. Placed between two nouns.

1) Indicates the possessive.

English approximation: "of" "belonging to" "with"

Examples:

きれいな眼 の 人	a person with beautiful eyes
kiree na me no hito	

大学[の]教授 — a college professor (literally: a professor of a college)

daigaku [no] kyooju

銀行[の]頭取 — president of the bank

ginkoo [no] toodori

クラス[の]委員 — a class representative

kurasu [no] iin

波[の]音 — the sound of waves

nami [no] oto

父[の]靴 — my father's shoes

chichi [no] kutsu

世界[の]平和 — world peace (literally: peace of the world)

sekai [no] heewa

A) これはあなた[の]本です。

Kore wa n. anata [no] hon desu.

This is your book.

B) わたし[の]かばん[の]中に地図があります。

n. Watashi [no] kaban [no] naka ni chizu ga ari-masu.

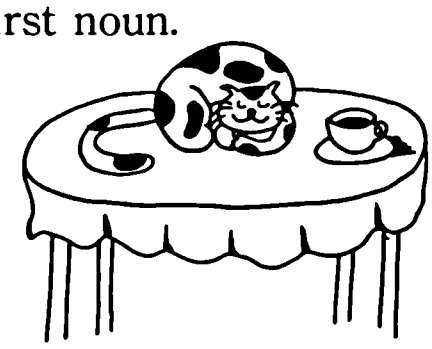
There is a map in my briefcase.

2) Indicates the relative location/direction of the first noun.

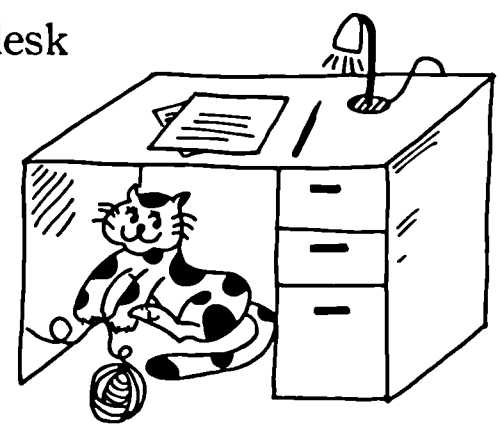
English approximation: "of"

テーブル[の]上 — on the table

teeburu [no] ue



つくえ　した
机 の 下　　under the desk



tsukue no shita

がっこう　となり
学校 の 隣　　next to the school

gakkoo no tonari

ゆうびんきょく　まえ
郵便局 の 前　　in front of the post office

yuubinkyoku no mae

よこ
デパート の 横　　to the side of the department store

depaato no yoko

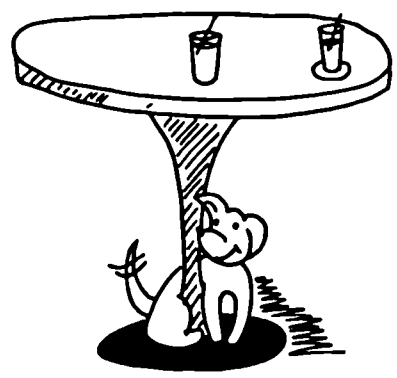
うし
わたし の 後ろ　　behind me

watashi no ushiro

おお　む
あの大きいビル の 向こう　　beyond that big building

ano ookii biru no mukoo

A) テーブル の 下に犬がいます。



n. Teeburu no shita ni inu ga i-masu.

There is a dog under the table.

ながし　なか
B) 流し の 中にゴキブリがいるよ！

n. Nagashi no naka ni gokiburi ga iru yo!

There are cockroaches in the sink!

3) Placed between two nouns, indicates the material the latter is made of.

English approximation: "(made of)"

木綿(もめん) の シャツ — a cotton shirt

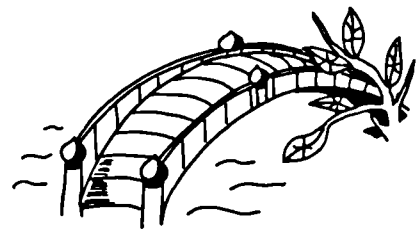
momen no shatsu

毛皮(けがわ) の コート — a fur coat

kegawa no kooto

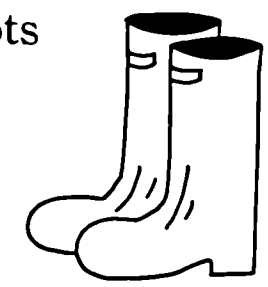
木(き) の 橋(はし) — a wooden bridge

ki no hashi



ゴム の ブーツ — a pair of rubber boots

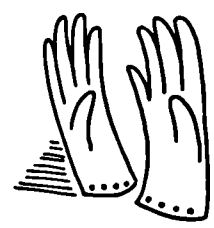
gomu no buutsu



A) わたしはきのう革(かわ) の 手袋(てぶくろ)を買(か)いました。

Watashi wa kinoo n. kawa no tebukuro o kai-mashita.

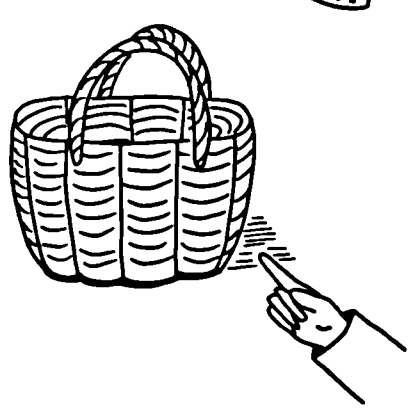
I bought a pair of leather gloves yesterday.



B) その竹(たけ) の かごはいくらですか？

Sono n. take no kago wa ikura desu ka?

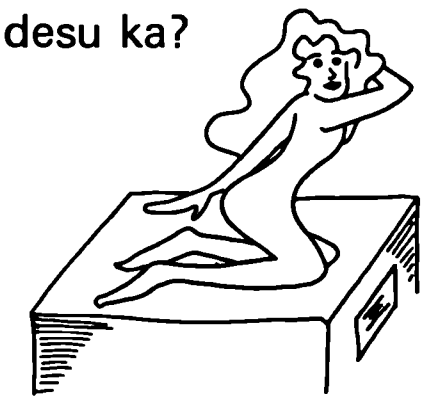
How much is that bamboo basket?



C) あのブロンズ[の]像はだれの作ですか？

Ano n. buronzu [no] zoo wa dare no saku desu ka?

Whose work is that bronze statue?



4) Shows that the second noun is the product of the first personal noun.

English approximation: "of" "created by"

A) これは川端康成[の]小説です。

Kore wa n. kawabata yasunari [no] shoosetsu desu.

This is a novel written by Kawabata Yasunari.

B) この曲はマーラー[の]交響曲一番です。

Kono kyoku wa n. maaraa [no] kookyookyoku ichi-ban desu.

This is Mahler's First Symphony.

5) Indicates the relationship between the two nouns.

English approximation: "of" "by" "with" "between" "to"

A) あの人はわたし[の]叔父です。

Ano hito wa n. watashi [no] oji desu.

That person is my uncle.

B) 彼女は社長[の]秘書です。

Kanojo wa n. shachoo [no] hisho desu.

She is secretary to the president.

C) あの人はわたしの命[の]恩人です。

Ano hito wa watashi no n. inochi [no] onjin desu.

He saved my life. (literally: That person is the one who saved my

life.)

6) Establishes that the second noun is in the category of the first noun.

English approximation: "of" "on" "about" "at"

A) 松岡先生(まつおかせんせい)は理科(りか)[の]先生(せんせい)です。

Matsuoka-sensee wa n. rika [no] sensee desu.

Mr. Matsuoka is a science teacher.

B) これは日本語(にほんご)[の]教科書(きょうかしょ)です。

Kore wa n. nihongo [no] kyookasho desu.

This is a Japanese language textbook.

C) 万有引力(ばんゆういんりょく)[の]法則(ほうそく)は、ニュートンによって発見(はっけん)された。

n. Banyuu-inryoku [no] hoosoku wa nyuuton ni yotte hakken-sareta.

The law of gravity was discovered by Isaac Newton.

7) Shows that the first noun is an attribute of the second noun.

English approximation: "that which is"

Examples:

親友(しんゆう)[の]次郎君(じろうくん)	my best friend Jiro (literally: Jiro who
shinyuu [no] jiroo-kun	is my best friend)
九十歳(きゅうじゅっさい)[の]おばあさん	an old woman of age ninety
kyuujus-sai [no] obaasan	
弁護士(べんごし)[の]清水先生(しみずせんせい)	Mr. Shimizu, the attorney
bengoshi [no] shimizu-sensee	

おんがく の でんどう
音楽 の 殿堂 — the great music hall

ongaku no dendoo

はな
ピンク の 花 — a pink flower (literally: the flower which is pink)

pinku no hana

はな
バラ の 花 — a rose (literally: the flower which is a rose)

bara no hana

わたし こうちょう ばんどう もう
A) 私は、校長 の 坂東と申します。

Watashi wa, n. koochoo no bandoo to mooshi-masu.

I am Bando, the principal of this school.

さとう しょうかい
B) ピアニスト の 佐藤さんをご紹介いたします。

n. Pianisuto no satoo-san o goshookai itashi-masu.

Let me introduce Ms. Sato, the pianist.

8) Where the first noun is a place name.

English approximation: "at" "in" "on" "over" "from" "of"

ふゆ さむ
A) ニューヨーク の 冬は寒いでしょうねえ。

n. Nyuuyooku no fuyu wa samui deshoo nee.

Winter in New York must be very cold.

あたみ かいがん
B) 熱海 の 海岸はきれいですよ。

n. Atami no kaigan wa kiree desu yo.

The coastline of Atami is beautiful.

きょうと いとこ てがみ き
C) 京都 の 従兄から手紙が来た。

n. Kyooto no itoko kara tegami ga kita.

I received a letter from my cousin in Kyoto.

9) The first noun describes the state in which the second noun exists or has entered.

English approximation: "in"

A) あのおじいさんはこうこつ[の]人になったそうだ。

Ano ojiisan wa n. kookotsu [no] hito ni natta soo da.

They say that the old man has become senile.

B) 彼女は白衣[の]天使です。

Kanojo wa n. hakui (byakue) [no] tenshi desu.

She is an angel in a white uniform (a nurse).

C) わたしは日本語[の]手紙が読めます。

Watashi wa n. nihongo [no] tegami ga yome-masu.

I can read a letter written in Japanese.

2. Accompanies some names of colors in order to transform them into adjectives.

English approximation: (the color of)

A) あれは緑(色)[の]車です。

Are wa n. midori (iro) [no] kuruma desu.

That is a green car.

B) この紫(色)[の]花は何といいますか？

Kono n. murasaki (iro) [no] hana wa nan to ii-masu ka?

What is the name of this purple flower?

C) 今日はこのグレー[の]コートを着て行こう。

Kyoo wa kono n. guree [no] kooto o kite ikoo.

I'll go out with this gray coat on today.

Names of colors ending in "i い" such as "shiro-i 白い," and "aka-i 赤い"

may drop the "i い" and replace it with "no の," i.e. "shiro no 白(しろ)の" and "aka no 赤(あか)の."

3. Placed after a noun, an adjective or a verb, functions as an indefinite pronoun.

English approximation: "one" "the one"

A) お父(とう)さん[の]は、どこにあるのかな？

n. Otoosan [no] wa, doko ni aru no ka na?

Where is Dad's? (literally: Where is the one which belongs to Dad?)

B) こっち[の]は甘(あま)いけど、そっち[の]は辛(から)いよ。

n. Kocchi [no] wa amai kedo, n. socchi [no] wa karai yo.

The one over here is sweet, but the one over there is salty.

C) わたし[の]はもう食(た)べてしまったよ。

n. Watashi [no] wa moo tabete shimatta yo.

I've already finished eating mine.

D) お刺身(さしみ)は新(あたら)しい[の]がおいしい。

Osashimi wa adj. atarashii [no] ga oishii.

As for pieces of sashimi, fresh ones are good.

E) そこの隅(すみ)で泣(な)いている[の]はだれ？

Soko no sumi de v. naite-iru [no] wa dare?

Who is the one crying in the corner over there?

F) 僕(ぼく)、まだ寝(ね)る[の]はいやだよ。テレビ見(み)たいから。

Boku, mada v. neru [no] wa iya da yo. Terebi mi-tai kara.

I don't want to go to bed yet. 'Cause I want to watch TV.

4. Placed after a noun indicating time.

English approximation: "of" "from"

A) これは十年前[の]新聞だよ。

Kore wa n. juu-nen mae [no] shinbun da yo.

This is a newspaper from ten years ago.

B) これから二十分[の]休憩があります。

Kore kara n. nijup-pun [no] kyuukee ga ari-masu.

We'll have a twenty-minute intermission now.

C) 昔[の]人達はどんな生活をしていたのだろう。

n. Mukashi [no] hito-tachi wa don-na seekatsu o shite-ita no daroo.

I wonder what kind of lives people lead in ancient times.

5. Used instead of the particle "ga が," it marks the subject of the verb following it. Not translatable.

A) 今日は風[の]吹く寒い日ですね。

Kyoo wa n. kaze [no] fuku samui hi desu ne.

Today is a cold windy day, isn't it?

B) 雨[の]降る日はうちの中で遊びましょう。

n. Ame [no] furu hi wa uchi no naka de asobi-mashoo.

On a rainy day, let's play inside the house.

C) これは南部さん[の]作曲した曲です。

Kore wa n. nanbu-san [no] sakkyoku-shita kyoku desu.

This is a piece composed by Ms. Nanbu.

6. In the patterns "... no yoo na ～のような" and "... no yoo ni ～のように," makes an adjectival phrase or an adverbial phrase, respectively.

English approximation: "as" "such as" "like"

A) 花に例えれば、彼女は白百合[の]ような人です。

Hana ni tatoere ba, kanojo wa n. shira-yuri [no] yoo na hito desu.

If I were to describe her as a flower, she would be a white lily.

B) 君どうかしたの？ 病人[の]ような青い顔をして。

Kimi doo ka shita no? n. Byoo-nin [no] yoo na aoi kao o shite.

Is something wrong? You look pale like you are sick.

C) この砂は砂糖[の]ように白いね。

Kono suna wa n. satoo [no] yoo ni shiroi ne.

This sand looks white like sugar.

D) 僕は鳥[の]ように空を飛んでみたい。

Boku wa n. tori [no] yoo ni sora o tonde mi-tai.

I want to fly in the sky like a bird.

7. Following a verb, gives it a nominal meaning of "a matter" or "a fact." The main verb of the sentence usually describes one of the five senses or emotion.

English approximation: "a fact" "a matter"

A) 飛行機が飛んでいる[の]が見えます。

cl. Hikooki ga tonde-iru [no] ga mie-masu.

I can see an airplane flying in the sky.

B) 犬のほえる[の]が聞こえる。

cl. Inu no hoeru [no] ga kikoeru.

I can hear a dog barking.

C) 君とよく遊んだ[の]を思い出すね。

cl. Kimi to yoku asonda [no] o omoidasu ne.

I remember we used to play together all the time.

D) わたしはパスホートをなくした[の]に気が付いた。

cl. Watashi wa pasupooto o nakushita [no] ni ki-ga-tsuita.

I realized that I had lost my passport.

8. Placed at the end of a sentence.

1) Following a verb, makes a softened command. Often accompanied by "yo よ" after it. Found in women's language.

English approximation: "..., all right?"

A) さあ、これからお風ろに入る[の(よ)]。

Saa, kore kara ofuro ni v. hairu [no (yo)].

You're going to take a bath now.

B) 風邪だからおとなしく寝ている[の(よ)]。

Kaze dakara otonashiku v. nete-iru [no (yo)].

You have a cold, so stay in bed.

2) Emphasizes the action or the state described.

English approximation: "the fact is that ..." "to tell the truth"

A) わたし、みよちゃんとけんかしちゃった[の]。

Watashi, miyo-chan to v. kenka-shi-chatta [no].

(The fact is that) I had a quarrel with Miyo.

B) 友達が漫画の本を貸してくれた[の]。

Tomodachi ga manga no hon o v. kashite-kureta [no].

(The fact is that) my friend lent me a comic book.

C) 僕おなかがすいたから、もう食べちゃった[の]。

Boku onaka ga suita kara, moo v. tabe-chatta [no].

(To tell the truth) I've already eaten because I was hungry.

3) Transforms a sentence into an interrogative (with a rising intonation). Informal version of "... no desu ka? ～のですか?" Not translatable.

A) この手紙(てがみ)、君(きみ)が書(か)いた[の]?

Kono tegami kimi ga v. kaita [no]?

Was it you who wrote this letter?

B) あした来(こ)ない[の]?

Ashita v. ko-nai [no]?

You are not coming tomorrow?

C) この本(ほん)もう読(よ)んじゃった[の]?

Kono hon moo v. yon-jatta [no]?

You've read this book already?

4) For casual emphasis. Used often by elderly men. Sometimes pronounced "noo のう." Not translatable.

A) おう、誠(まこと)か、よく来(き)た[の]。

Oo, makoto ka, yoku v. kita [no].

Oh, it's you, Makoto, good of you to come.

B) ありがたいことじゃ。今年(ことし)は米(こめ)が豊作(ほうさく)で[の]。

Arigatai koto ja. Kotoshi wa kome ga hoosaku c. de [no].

Thank God. We have a good rice harvest this year.

9. In the pattern "... no ... no ～の～の," connects two contrasting actions/conditions.

English approximation: "(or)"

A) 行(い)く[の]行(い)かない[の]と迷(まよ)っていないで、早(はや)くどっちかに決(き)めたら?

v. Iku [no] v. ika-nai [no] to mayotte-inai de, hayaku docchi ka ni kimetara?

Instead of being indecisive whether or not to go, why don't you just decide whichever quickly?

B) 寒(さむ)い[の]暑(あつ)い[の]と言(い)ってないで、ジョギングは毎朝(まいあさ)しなさい。

adj.Samui [no] adj.atsui [no] to itte-nai de, jogingu wa maiasa shinasai.

Don't complain about the weather being (too) hot or cold. You must go jogging every morning.

10. The contraction of "... no tokoro ～のところ." Colloquial expression. English approximation: "of"

Examples:

僕(ぼく)[の]うち	僕(ぼく)[ん]ち	my place
boku [no] uchi	boku-[n] chi	
あなた[の]ところ	あんた[ん]とこ	your place
anata [no] tokoro	anta-[n] toko	
彼女(かのじょ)[の]ところ	彼女(かのじょ)[ん]とこ	her place
kanojo [no] tokoro	kanojo-[n] toko	

A) お父(とう)さん、この算数(さんすう)の問題(もんだい)難(むずか)しくて、ここ[ん]ところがわからないよ。

Otoosan, kono sansuu no mondai muzukashiku te, n.koko-[n] tokoro ga wakara-nai yo.

Dad, this math problem is hard, and I don't understand this part here.

B) あ、僕砂浜(ぼくすなはま)[ん]とこ（ところ）に帽子(ぼうし)忘(わす)れてきちゃった。

A, boku n.sunahama-[n] toko (tokoro) ni booshi wasurete ki-chatta.

Oops, I forgot my hat on the beach (literally: at the place on the beach).

NO-DA(N-DA) の-だ(ん-だ) Combination particle

A combination of the particle "no の" and the copula "da だ." Colloquial form: "n da んだ." Informal form of "no desu のです." Past form "no datta のだった" is used mostly in written language with a slight exclamatory tone.

1. Emphasizes an explanation, or a cause of events/actions. Not translatable.

A) あの大雪(おおゆき)で、わたしたちは歩(ある)くことさえ出来(でき)なかった[のだ]。

Ano ooyuki de, watashi-tachi wa aruku koto sae v. deki-nakatta [no da].

It was impossible to even walk in such heavy snow.

B) 長年(ながねん)外国(がいこく)に暮(く)らしていると、ますます日本食(にほんしょく)が恋(こい)しくなる[のだ]。

Naganen gaikoku ni kurashite-iru to, masu-masu nihon-shoku ga v. koishiku-naru [no da].

The longer you live in a foreign country, the more you crave for Japanese food.

2. Expresses desire or will. Not translatable.

A) 僕(ぼく)は今度(こんど)こそ弁論大会(べんろんたいかい)で優勝(ゆうしょう)する[のだ]。

Boku wa kondo koso benron-taikai de v. yuushoo-suru [no da].

This time I've got to win at the speech contest.

B) この美術展(びじゅつてん)は見逃(みのが)せない。どんな事(こと)があっても絶対(ぜったい)に行(い)く[んだ]。

Kono bijutsu-ten wa minogase-nai. Don-na koto ga atte mo zettai ni v. iku-[n da].

I can't miss seeing this art exhibition. No matter what, I'm definitely going to go.

3. At the end of a sentence, as an exclamatory particle. Not translatable.

A) 勉強しないで遊んでばかりいたから、行きたい学校に入れなかった[のだ]。

Benkyoo-shi-nai de asonde bakari ita kara, iki-tai gakkoo ni v. haire-nakatta[no da].

It's because you didn't study and fooled around all the time, you couldn't get into the school of your choice.

B) 彼は忙しいのに、長い手紙をくれた[んだ]。すぐに返事を出さなくては。

Kare wa isogashii no ni nagai tegami o v. kureta-[n da]. Sugu ni henji o dasa-nakute wa.

Even though he is busy, he wrote me a long letter. I have to write back right away.

NO-DAROO(N-DAROO) の-だろう(ん-だろう)

Combination particle

A combination of the particle "no の" and the copula "daroo だろう." Colloquial form: "n daroo んだろう." Suggests a reason or a cause, though it is uncertain.

English approximation: "is/are probably ..." "(I) wonder ..."

A) 今我々にとって一番必要なのは、公害問題の解決な[のだろう]。

Ima ware-ware ni totte ichiban hitsuyoo na no wa, koogai-mondai no kaiketsu $_{c.}$ na [no daroo].

The most important thing right now is probably to solve the problem of pollution.

B) どうした[んだろう]、もう三十分にもなるのに、彼女はまだ戻ってこない。

Doo $_{v.}$ shita-[n daroo], moo sanjup-pun ni mo naru no ni, kanojo wa mada modotte ko-nai.

I wonder what happened to her? It's already been half an hour, she hasn't come back yet.

NODE(N-DE) ので（んで）

Colloquial form: "n de んで"

Note: "node ので" vs. "kara から." While both are translated into English as "since/because," "node ので" is employed more often in describing a reason or a cause that is objective, or already present and beyond the control of the speaker. "Kara から" is used to express the speaker's will, command, conjecture, or question. Compare:

A) 今日は暖かい[ので]、桜も満開になるでしょう。

Kyoo wa $_{adj.}$ atatakai [node], sakura mo mankai ni naru deshoo.

Since it is warm today, the cherry blossoms will likely be in full bloom.

B) 車を買いたい[から]貯金をしています。

Kuruma o v.kai-tai [kara] chokin o shite-imasu.

Because I want to buy a car, I am saving up.

This distinction is sometimes very thin, and "kara から" and "node ので" can on occasion be used interchangeably.

1. Indicates a reason or a cause.

English approximation: "since" "because"

A) 赤ちゃんが生まれた[ので(んで)]、みんなで大喜びしています。

Akachan ga v.umareta [node(n de)], min-na de oo-yorokobi shite-imasu.

Everyone is very happy, because the baby was born.

B) その料理は、思ったよりおいしくなかった[ので(んで)]、一口しか食べませんでした。

Sono ryoori wa, omotta yori adj.oishiku-nakatta [node(n de)], hito-kuchi shika tabe-masen deshita.

Since that dish wasn't as good as I thought it would be, I didn't eat more than a bite.

2. In the patterns "to yuu node と言うので" and "a(n)mari ... node あ(ん)まり～ので."

English approximation: "because (someone) said ... " "since it was so ..."

A) 彼が美術館に行きたいと言う[ので(んで)]、案内してあげました。

Kare ga bijutsukan ni iki-tai to v.yuu [node(n de)], an-nai-shite age-mashita.

Because he said he wanted to go to a museum, I took him around.

B) あんまり寒い[ので(んで)]、ストーブをつけました。

Anmari adj.samui [node (n de)], sutoobu o tsuke-mashita.

Since it was so cold, I turned on the heater.

3. Placed at the end of a sentence, preceded by a reason for an action described in the first part of the sentence.

English approximation: (because)

A) 彼(かれ)のアパートへ行(い)ったの、どうしても来(き)てもらいたいと言(い)う のでで(んで)。

Kare no apaato e itta no, dooshitemo kite morai-tai to v. yuu node (n de).

I went to his apartment, (because) he said he really wanted me to come over.

B) もう寝(ね)るよ、あしたの朝(あさ)が早(はや)い のでで(んで)。

Moo neru yo, ashita no asa ga adj. hayai node (n de).

I'm going to go to sleep now, (because) I have to get up early tomorrow morning.

NO-DE のーで Combination particle

A combination of the particles "no の" and "de で."

English approximation: "by/from the fact that ..."

A) 彼女(かのじょ)がいい先生(せんせい)であることは、学生達(がくせいたち)に評判(ひょうばん)がいい のでわかる。

Kanojo ga ii sensee de aru koto wa, gakusee-tachi ni hyooban ga adj. ii no de wakaru.

That she is a good teacher can be gathered from the fact that students say good things about her.

B) この町(まち)の空気(くうき)がよくないことは、スモッグの日(ひ)が多(おお)い のでわかる。

Kono machi no kuuki ga yoku-nai koto wa, sumoggu no hi ga adj.ooi [no de] wakaru.

That this town's air isn't very clean is obvious by the fact that there are many days with smog.

NO-DE ARU　の-である　Combination particle

A combination of the particle "no の" and the copula "de aru である." Emphatically expresses a reason or a cause. Mainly used in written language. (See p. 164 "no desu のです.")

English approximation: (because)

A) 物(もの)が落(お)ちるのは、地球(ちきゅう)に引力(いんりょく)があるからな[のである]。

Mono ga ochiru no wa, chikyuu ni inryoku ga aru kara c.na [no de aru].

The reason why things fall is because the earth has gravity.

B) 昔(むかし)、恐竜(きょうりゅう)が住(す)んでいたのがわかったのは、化石(かせき)が発見(はっけん)されたからな[のである]。

Mukashi, kyooryuu ga sunde-ita no ga wakatta no wa, kaseki ga hakken sareta kara c.na [no de aru].

The reason why we know that there were dinosaurs long ago is because fossils were discovered.

NO-DESHOO(N-DESHOO) の-でしょう(ん-でしょう)

Combination particle

A combination of the particle "no の" and the copula "deshoo でしょう."

Colloquial form: "n deshoo んでしょう."

English approximation: "perhaps it's because ..."

A) 今日(きょう)はお盆(ぼん)だから、店(みせ)が開(あ)いていない[のでしょう]か?

Kyoo wa obon da kara, mise ga v. **aite i-nai** [**no deshoo**] **ka?**

Perhaps it's because today is the day of the Obon ceremony that stores are not open?

B) あなたは、わたしに会(あ)いたくて来(き)た[んでしょう]?

Anata wa, watashi ni ai-taku te v. **kita** [**n deshoo**]**?**

Perhaps it's because you wanted to see me that you came over, isn't it?

NO-DESU(N-DESU) の-です(ん-です) Combination particle

A combination of the particle "no の" and the copula "desu です." Formal form of "no da のだ." Colloquial form: "n desu んです."

1. Emphasizes a statement. Not translatable.

A) 子供達(こどもたち)を守(まも)るのは、わたしたち大人(おとな)の責任(せきにん)な[の(ん)です]。

Kodomo-tachi o mamoru no wa, watashi-tachi otona no sekinin c. **na** [**no(n) desu**].

It is our responsibility as adults to protect (our) children.

B) ゆうべお酒(さけ)を飲(の)みすぎたせいか頭(あたま)が痛(いた)い[の(ん)です]。

Yuube osake o nomi-sugita see ka atama ga adj. **itai** [**no(n) desu**].

Perhaps because I had too much to drink last night, my head hurts.

2. Emphasizes a question. Not translatable.

A) あなたは、いつになったら貸したお金を返してくれる[の(ん)です]か？

Anata wa, itsu ni nattara kashita okane o v. **kaeshite-kureru [no(n) desu] ka?**

When are you going to pay me back the money you owe?

B) 大事なつぼをこわしてしまって、どうしてくれる[んです]か。

Daiji na tsubo o kowashite shimatte, doo v. **shite-kureru-[n desu] ka.**

(You) broke a treasured vase, what are you going to do about it?

3. In the past tense form "no deshita のでした," gives a description as an explanation for an action.

English approximation: "(it so happened that ...)"

A) 感動的なスピーチに、聴衆は心から拍手を送った[のでした]。

Kandoo-teki na supiichi ni, cl. **chooshuu wa kokoro kara haku-shu o okutta [no deshita].**

After the moving speech, (it so happened that) the audience gave their wholehearted applause.

B) かわいそうに、主人が死んだことも知らずに、その犬は毎日駅まで迎えに行っていた[のでした]。

Kawaisoo ni, shujin ga shinda koto mo shirazu ni, cl. **sono inu wa mainichi eki made mukae ni itte-ita [no deshita].**

Not knowing that its master had died, (it so happened that) that poor dog went to the station to meet him every day.

NOMI のみ

Mainly used in written language; in colloquial speech, "dake だけ" or "bakari ばかり" are usually used instead.

1. Excludes other possibilities and establishes a limit.

English approximation: "only"

A) この村(むら)[のみ]が、水害(すいがい)に遭(あ)わなかった。

n. Kono mura [nomi] ga, suigai ni awa-nakatta.

Only this village escaped the damages from the flood.

B) 一度(いちど)や二度(にど)のテスト[のみ]で、学生(がくせい)を評価(ひょうか)してはいけない。

Ichi-do ya ni-do no n. tesuto [nomi] de, gakusee o hyooka-shite wa ike-nai.

(You) must not judge students based only on one or two exams.

2. In the pattern "nomi narazu のみならず."

English approximation: "not only ..."

A) この水族館(すいぞくかん)には、深海魚(しんかいぎょ)[のみ]ならず、熱帯魚(ねったいぎょ)もいる。

Kono suizokkan ni wa, n. shinkai-gyo [nomi] narazu, nettai-gyo mo iru.

In this aquarium, there are not only deep-sea fish but also tropical fish.

B) 彼女(かのじょ)は教授(きょうじゅ)として[のみ]ならず、作家(さっか)としても活躍(かつやく)している。

Kanojo wa ph. kyooju to shite [nomi] narazu, sakka to shite mo katsuyaku-shite-iru.

She is active not only as a professor but also as a writer.

3. Placed at or near the end of a sentence for emphasis. The implication

is that there is only one alternative which is not exactly desirable but unchangeable.

English approximation: "only"

A) どうか父が生きて帰って来るようにとただ祈る[のみ]。

Dooka chichi ga ikite kaette kuru yoo ni to tada v. inoru [nomi].

(I) can only pray that (my) father will come back alive.

B) 水不足はいよいよ深刻だ。あとはただ雨が降るのを待つ[のみ]だ。

Mizu-busoku wa iyo-iyo shinkoku da. Ato wa tada ame ga furu no o v. matsu [nomi] da.

The water shortage is really serious. The only thing we can do now is to wait for the rain to fall.

NONI のに

1. Adversative usage, with an implied tone of surprise or dissatisfaction. Also in the patterns "to yuu noni というのに" and "ii noni いいのに."

English approximation: "although" "but" "even though"

A) あら、もう三杯も食べた[のに]、またおかわり？

Ara, moo san-bai mo v. tabeta [noni], mata okawari?

My goodness, you've already had three helpings, but you want another one?

B) わたしの帽子、確かにここに置いた[のに]、ないわ。

Watashi no booshi, tashika ni koko ni v. oita [noni], nai wa.

I know I definitely put my hat here, but it's gone.

C) 夏休みだという[のに]、宿題がたくさんあって遊びに行けない。

Natsu-yasumi da to v. yuu **noni**, shukudai ga takusan atte asobi ni ike-nai.

Even though it's summer vacation, (I) can't go out to play because (I) have too much homework. (literally: Even though it is called "summer vacation.")

2. Expresses dissatisfaction or resentment toward an unexpected situation.

English approximation: "(if ...), can/would do ..., (but ...)"

A) 君(きみ)が来(く)るとわかっていれば、僕(ぼく)、うちにいた**のに**。

Kimi ga kuru to wakatte ire ba, boku, uchi ni v. ita **noni**.

If I had known that you were coming over, I would have been home, (but)...

B) もう百円(ひゃくえん)あれば、この本(ほん)が買(か)える**のに**なあ。

Moo hyaku-en are ba, kono hon ga v. kaeru **noni** naa.

If only I had one hundred more yen, I could buy this book, (but)...

3. In rebuking the party addressed for a fault or wrongdoing.

English approximation: "even though"

A) 食(た)べないの？　せっかく作(つく)った**のに**。

Tabe-nai no? Sekkaku v. tsukutta **noni**.

You're not going to eat it, even though I went to the trouble of making it?

NO-NI　の-に　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "no の" and "ni に."

1. Indicates the method by which an end is to be achieved.

English approximation: "in order to ..." "in doing ..."

A) 日本語(にほんご)がもっと上手(じょうず)に話(はな)せるようになる**のに**は、どうしたらいいですか？

Nihon-go ga motto joozu ni hanaseru yoo ni v. naru **no ni** wa, doo shitara ii desu ka?

In order to become a better speaker of Japanese, what should I do?

B) 山歩(やまある)きをする**のに**は、虫(むし)よけを持(も)って行(い)ったほうがいいよ。

Yama-aruki o v. suru **no ni** wa, mushi-yoke o motte-itta hoo ga ii yo.

In order to hike mountains, it would be better to bring an insect repellent.

2. Indicates the means or material with which something is to be achieved.

English approximation: "for (i.e. as a means for doing ...)"

A) この箱(はこ)、本(ほん)を入(い)れる**のに**ちょうどいいね。

Kono hako, hon o v. ireru **no ni** choodo ii ne.

This box is perfect for putting books in, (isn't it)?

B) この貯金(ちょきん)、旅行(りょこう)する**のに**少(すこ)し足(た)りないわね。

Kono chokin, v. ryokoo-suru **no** ni sukoshi tari-nai wa ne.

These savings aren't quite enough for going on a trip, (don't you think)?

O (WO)　を

FUNDAMENTALS OF "O を"

First, note that the particle "o" is always written "を," even though its pronunciation is shown as "o." See below.

Examples:

A)　これ[を]三(みっ)つください。　　Give me three of these.

Kore [o] mittsu kudasai.

B)　落(お)としたお金(かね)[を]拾(ひろ)いました。

Otoshita okane [o] hiroi-mashita.

I had dropped　the money　I picked up

I picked up the money I had dropped.

Basically, "o を" always follows a noun or a nominal which is the direct object of a transitive verb.

Example:

わたしは　ケーキ[を]　食(た)べました。

Watashi wa keeki [o] tabe-mashita.

I　cake　ate

I　ate　(a piece of) cake.

subject　transitive verb　object

However, some transitive verbs in English take the particle "ga が" instead of "o を" in Japanese. Such verbs are not numerous, and some examples are:

hoshii (desu)ほしい(です) (to want)

iru いる (to need)

kikoeru 聞(き)こえる (to be able to hear)

kirai (desu) 嫌(きら)い(です) (to dislike)

mieru 見(み)える (to be able to see)

suki (desu) 好(す)き(です) (to like)

wakaru わかる (to understand)

Examples:

A) あなたはおすし[が]好(す)きですか？

Anata wa osushi [ga] suki desu ka?

Do you like sushi?

B) あなたは何(なに)[が]いりますか？

Anata wa nani [ga] iri-masu ka?

What do you need?

C) 君(きみ)はどれ[が]わからないの？

Kimi wa dore [ga] wakara-nai no?

Which is the one you don't understand?

D) あそこに山(やま)[が]見(み)えます。

Asoko ni yama [ga] mie-masu.

I see a mountain over there.

Another point concerning the particle "o を" is that certain intransitive

verbs which do not require objects in English are expressed in Japanese as a set pattern: "noun + o を + transitive verb."

For example:		Literally:
I ski.	わたしはスキー[を]します。	I do skiing.
	Watashi wa skii [o] shi-masu.	
I jog.	わたしはジョギング[を]します。	I do jogging.
	Watashi wa jogingu [o] shi-masu.	
I study.	わたしは勉強(べんきょう)[を]します。	I do studying.
	Watashi wa benkyoo [o] shi-masu.	
I sweated.	わたしは汗(あせ)[を]かきました。	I was in a sweat.
	Watashi wa ase [o] kaki-mashita.	

1. In relation to the type of verb in a sentence:

1) Placed after a noun, marks it as the direct object of the verb. Not translatable.

A) コーヒー[を]飲(の)みましょう。

n. Koohii [o] nomi-mashoo.

Let's have coffee.

B) わたしは、きのう、おいしい天(てん)ぷら[を]食(た)べました。

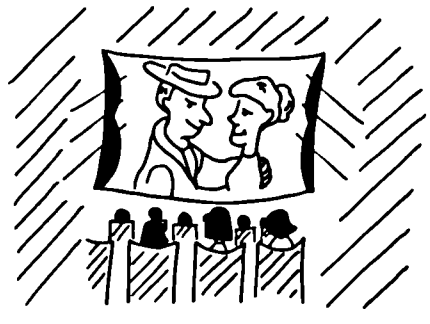
Watashi wa, kinoo, oishii n. tenpura [o] tabe-mashita.

I had very good tempura yesterday.

C) 僕(ぼく)はおとといフランス映画(えいが)[を]見(み)た。

Boku wa ototoi furansu $_{n.}$ eega [o] mita.

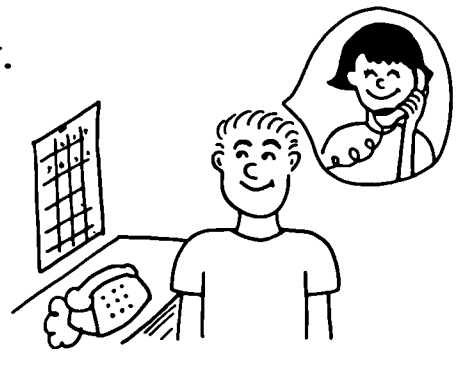
I saw a French movie the day before yesterday.



D) あした妹(いもうと)に電話(でんわ)[を]かけます。

Ashita imooto ni $_{n.}$ denwa [o] kake-masu.

(I)'ll call my younger sister tomorrow.



E) 先週(せんしゅう)デパートで素敵(すてき)な靴(くつ)[を]買(か)いました。

Senshuu depaato de suteki na $_{n.}$ kutsu [o] kai-mashita.

(I) bought a pair of very nice shoes at the department store last week.

2) Placed after a noun which is the direct object of a transitive verb ending in the pattern "... tai ～たい (want to)," "... taku-nai ～たくない (don't want to)," "... takatta ～たかった (wanted to)," "... taku-nakatta ～たくなかった (didn't want to)," as shown below. In these cases, "ga が" can be used instead of "o を" to add slightly more emphasis. Not translatable.

A) 僕(ぼく)はお酒(さけ)[を(が)]飲(の)みたいんです。

Boku wa $_{n.}$ osake [o (ga)] nomi-tai-n desu.

I want to drink sake.

B) わたしはアイスクリーム[を(が)]食(た)べたい。

Watashi wa n. aisu-kuriimu [o (ga)] tabe-tai.

I want to have ice cream.

3) Placed after a noun in a sentence with a causative verb, indicates that a person/thing causes/caused another person/thing to do something. A couple of examples of the causative form of a verb are as follows. Not translatable.

Dictionary form	Causative form
来(く)る (to come)	(を)来(こ)させる (to make someone come)
kuru	ko-saseru
行(い)く (to go)	(を)行(い)かせる (to make someone go)
iku	ika-seru

A) 娘(むすめ)にピアノ[を]習(なら)わせています。

Musume ni n. piano [o] narawasete-imasu.

I'm making my daughter take piano lessons.

B) 病院(びょういん)の中(なか)では、子供達(こどもたち)[を]走(はし)らせないようにしてください。

Byooin no naka de wa, n. kodomo-tachi [o] hashirase-nai yoo ni shite kudasai.

Don't allow children to run around in the hospital.

4) Placed after a noun which is the direct object of a verb in the passive form "... reru(... re-masu) ～れる(～れます)," "... rareru(... rare-masu) ～られる(～られます)," indicates that the subject of the sentence receives an action from the other party. Not translatable.

A) わたしは先生(せんせい)に名前(なまえ)[を]呼(よ)ばれた。

Watashi wa sensee ni n. namae [o] yobareta.

I was called on by my teacher.

B) わたしは猫(ねこ)に魚(さかな)[を]取(と)られた。

Watashi wa neko ni $_{n.}$ sakana [o] torareta.

My fish was taken by a cat.

2. In the pattern "... o shite-iru ～をしている (... o shite-imasu ～をしています)" after a noun indicating an occupation, shows that the subject of the sentence is engaged in that occupation. Not translatable.

A) わたしは社長(しゃちょう)の秘書(ひしょ)[を]しています。

Watashi wa shachoo no $_{n.}$ hisho [o] shite-imasu.

I work as a secretary to the company president.

B) 父(ちち)は先生(せんせい)[を]しています。

Chichi wa $_{n.}$ sensee [o] shite-imasu.

My father is a teacher.

3. Indicates the point of departure, both in the concrete and the abstract sense.

English approximation: " (at) " " (from)"

A) あなたは毎朝(まいあさ)何時(なんじ)にうち[を]出(で)ますか？

Anata wa maiasa nan-ji ni $_{n.}$ uchi [o] de-masu ka?

What time do you leave home every morning?

B) あしたローマ[を]発(た)ってパリに行(い)きます。

Ashita $_{n.}$ rooma [o] tatte pari ni iki-masu.

I'm leaving Rome for Paris tomorrow.

C) 地下鉄(ちかてつ)[を]降(お)りてから、タクシーでうちに帰(かえ)りました。

n. Chikatetsu [o] orite kara, takushii de uchi ni kaeri-mashita.

After I got off the subway, I went home by taxi.

E) あなたはいつこの大学(だいがく)[を]卒業(そつぎょう)しますか？

Anata wa itsu kono daigaku [o] sotsugyoo-shi-masu ka?

When will you be graduating from this university?

4. Used with a verb of motion, indicates that an action is continued at the place preceding it.

English approximation: "on" "through"

Some examples of verbs of motion are:

doraibu-suru ドライブする (to drive)

hashiru 走(はし)る (to run)

hau はう (to creep)

iku 行(い)く (to go)

toori-sugiru 通(とお)り過(す)ぎる (to pass through)

wataru 渡(わた)る(to cross)

A) わたしはスロープ[を]滑(すべ)りました。

Watashi wa n. suroopu [o] suberi-mashita.

I slid down the slope.

B) あなたはどの道(みち)[を]通(とお)ってここへ来(き)ましたか？

Anata wa dono n. michi [o] tootte koko e ki-mashita ka?

Which road did you take to get here?

C) わたし達(たち)は、広(ひろ)い海(うみ)の上(うえ)[を]走(はし)るハイウェイ[を]ドライブしました。

Watashi-tachi wa hiroi umi no n. ue [o] hashiru n. haiuee [o] doraibu-shi-mashita.

We drove on a highway running over a wide stretch of ocean.

5. Used in some set phrases such as "... o hajime to shite ～をはじめとして (including, foremost)," "... o hittoo ni ～を筆頭(ひっとう)に (from the top down)," "kore o ki ni これを機(き)に (taking this opportunity)."

A) 卒業式(そつぎょうしき)には、父兄(ふけい)[を]はじめとして、大勢(おおぜい)の来賓(らいひん)が出席(しゅっせき)した。

Sotsugyoo-shiki ni wa, n. fukee [o] hajime to shite, oozee no raihin ga shusseki-shita.

Many guests, including family members, attended the graduation ceremony.

B) この会社(かいしゃ)では、社長(しゃちょう)[を]筆頭(ひっとう)に毎朝体操(まいあさたいそう)をしています。

Kono kaisha de wa, n. shachoo [o] hittoo ni maiasa taisoo o shite-imasu.

At this firm, everyone from the president on down does exercises every morning.

C) これ[を]機(き)に禁煙(きんえん)をしよう。

n. Kore [o] ki ni kin-en o shiyoo.

Let me take this opportunity to quit smoking.

SA さ

Placed at the end of a sentence.

1. Emphasizes the sentence. Casual usage. Not translatable.

A) ゆうべ徹夜(てつや)したんだもの、眠(ねむ)いのは当(あ)たり前(まえ)[さ]。

Yuube tetsuya-shita-n da mono, nemui no wa n. atarimae [sa].

You stayed up all night last night, so it's natural (indeed) that

you're sleepy.

B) 頭痛(ずつう)がひどいって？　ゆうべあんなに飲(の)んだんだもの。罰(ばち)が当(あた)ったの[さ]。

Zutsuu ga hidoit te? Yuube an-na ni nonda-n da mono. Bachi ga atatta p. no [sa].

Your headache is really bad? You drank so much last night, you are (indeed) paying the price.

2. After interrogative pronouns or a phrase containing an interrogative pronoun, emphasizes the question in a fairly brusque manner. Not translatable.

A) じゃあ、だれに聞(き)いたらいいの[さ]。

Jaa, dare ni kiitara ii p. no [sa].

(So) who do you want me to ask, then?

B) なに[さ]、返事(へんじ)もしないで。

n. Nani [sa], henji mo shi-nai de.

What('s with you), that (you) don't even answer me.

3. In the patterns "te sa てさ" and "to sa とさ," introduces something that was said by someone else.

English approximation: "..., (I hear, he/she said)"

A) 太田君(おおたくん)、来月(らいげつ)ロサンゼルスに転勤(てんきん)だって[さ]。

Oota-kun, raigetsu rosanzerusu ni tenkin p. datte [sa].

Ota is going to be transferred to Los Angeles next month, I hear.

B) それから王子様(おうじさま)と王女様(おうじょさま)は幸(しあわ)せに暮(く)らしましたと[さ]。

Sore kara ooji-sama to oojo-sama wa shiawase ni kurashi-mashita p. to [sa].

The Prince and Princess lived happily ever after, it is said.

SAE さえ

1. Cites an extreme example to make a comment on the norm. Often accompanied by a negative, or in the "sae ... dakara さえ～(だ)から" pattern.

English approximation: "even"

A) この魚(さかな)は、猫(ねこ)[さえ]見向(みむ)きもしないよ。

Kono sakana wa, n. neko [sae] mimuki mo shi-nai yo.

Even cats wouldn't look twice at this fish.

B) たった一(ひと)つの間違(まちが)いで[さえ]ずいぶん差(さ)がでてしまう。

Tatta hitotsu no machigai p. de [sae] zuibun sa ga dete shimau.

Even a single mistake can make a big difference.

2. Indicates that if one criterion is fulfilled, all conditions will be fulfilled.

English approximation: "if only" "only if"

A) 時間(じかん)[さえ]あれば、歌舞伎(かぶき)も見(み)たいのですが。

n. Jikan [sae] are ba, kabuki mo mi-tai no desu ga.

If only I had time, I would like to see a kabuki performance, as well, (but)...

B) お宅様(たくさま)[さえ]よろしければ、今晩家内(こんばんかない)とお邪魔(じゃま)したいと思(おも)うのですが。

n. Otaku-sama [sae] yoroshikere ba, konban kanai to ojama shi-tai to omou no desu ga.

I would like to come over with my wife this evening, only if it's convenient for you.

3. Shows that something exists in addition to something else. Often in a "... bakari de naku ... sae ～ばかりでなく～さえ" pattern.

English approximation: "(not only ..., but) ... also"

A) どうしたのかしら、この猫(ねこ)。お魚(さかな)ばかりじゃなく、大好物(だいこうぶつ)のミルク[さえ]飲(の)まないのよ。

Doo shita no kashira, kono neko. Osakana bakari ja naku, dai-koobutsu no n. miruku [sae] noma-nai no yo.

I wonder what's wrong with this cat? Not only is she not eating fish, but she's also not drinking milk, which she loves.

B) 昔(むかし)と違(ちが)って、今(いま)は、夏(なつ)ばかりでなく、冬(ふゆ)で[さえ]ナスやキュウリが食(た)べられます。

Mukashi to chigatte, ima wa, natsu bakari de naku, fuyu p. de [sae] nasu ya kyuuri ga taberare-masu.

Unlike the old days, now we can eat eggplants and cucumbers not only in summer but also in winter.

SHI し

1. In citing a list, emphasizes the items listed, in a "... shi ... shi ～し～し" pattern.

English approximation: "... and ..."

A) 職(しょく)は失(うしな)う[し]、妻(つま)とは別(わか)れる[し]、彼(かれ)はひどく元気(げんき)がない。

Shoku wa v. ushinau [shi], tsuma to wa v. wakareru [shi], kare wa hidoku genki ga nai.

He has lost his job, (and) he has split with his wife; he's very

depressed.

B) 地震(じしん)でうちはこわれる[し]、洪水(こうずい)で畑(はたけ)は駄目(だめ)になる[し]、どうしたらいいのかわからない。

Jishin de uchi wa $_{v.}$kowareru [shi], koozui de hatake wa dame ni $_{v.}$naru [shi], doo shitara ii no ka wakara-nai.

The house was wrecked by the earthquake, and the fields were ruined because of the flood; I don't know what to do.

2. In a list, shows that the items or situations listed are the reasons or basis for another action or condition.

English approximation: "... (and)..., so ..."

A) 風(かぜ)は強(つよ)い[し]、雪(ゆき)は降(ふ)り出(だ)した[し]、今日(きょう)は出(で)かけるのはやめましょうよ。

Kaze wa $_{adj.}$tsuyoi [shi], yuki wa $_{v.}$furi-dashita [shi], kyoo wa dekakeru no wa yame-mashoo yo.

It's very windy, and it's started to snow, so let's not go out today.

B) もうこんな時間(じかん)だ[し]、あしたにしようよ。

Moo kon-na jikan $_{c.}$da [shi], ashita ni shi yoo yo.

It's already this late, so let's put it off until tomorrow.

3. Lists two conflicting items or situations.

English approximation: "... but ..."

A) 新(あたら)しい洋服(ようふく)は欲(ほ)しい[し]、お金(かね)はない[し]、学生(がくせい)のふところは寂(さび)しいなあ。

Atarashii yoofuku wa $_{v.}$hoshii [shi], okane wa $_{adj.}$nai [shi], gakusee no futokoro wa sabishii naa.

I want some new clothes, but I don't have money (for them); a

student's budget is pretty sad.

B) 歯は痛い[し]、歯医者には行きたくない[し]、困ったよ。

Ha wa $_{adj.}$itai [shi], haisha ni wa $_{v.}$iki-taku-nai [shi], komatta yo.

I have a toothache, but I don't want to go to a dentist; I'm in a bind.

4. In the pattern "aru mai shi あるまいし."

English approximation: "it's not as if ..."

A) 夏でもあるまい[し]、薄いシャツ一枚で。寒くないの？

Natsu de mo $_{ph.}$aru mai [shi], usui shatsu ichi-mai de. Samuku-nai no?

It's not as if it's summer, (and you're wearing) only a thin shirt. Aren't you cold?

B) 大金持ちでもあるまい[し]、あんなにぜいたくな生活をしていてお金が続くのかしら？

Oo-ganemochi de mo $_{ph.}$aru mai [shi], an-nani zeetaku na seekatsu o shite ite okane ga tsuzuku no kashira?

It's not as if (she's) a millionaire. I wonder if her money's going to last, living the luxurious lifestyle she does.

SHIKA しか

Always followed by a negative; negates everything else except that which precedes it.

1. Placed after a noun.

English approximation: "(not) any more (than)" "only (this) and nothing else"

A) 期末(きまつ)テストまで、後(あと)たった一週間(いっしゅうかん)[しか]ありません。

Kimatsu-tesuto made, ato tatta n. is-shuukan [shika] ari-masen.

There's only a week left until final exams. (literally: Until final exams, there isn't any more (time) than a week left.)

B) お母(かあ)さん、今日(きょう)のおやつこれ[しか]ないの？

Okaasan, kyoo no oyatsu n. kore [shika] nai no?

Mom, is this all there is for snacks today? (literally: Mom, is there only this and nothing else for snacks today?)

2. Placed after a verb, sets limit on the extent of the action.

English approximation: "there is no choice but"

A) セミナーのレホートの締(し)め切(き)りはあさって。こうなったら徹夜(てつや)する[しか]ない。

Seminaa no repooto no shimekiri wa asatte. Koo nattara v. tetsuya-suru [shika] nai.

The deadline for the seminar report is the day after tomorrow. Now I have no choice but to work on it all night long.

B) 財布(さいふ)を盗(ぬす)まれたから、歩(ある)いて帰(かえ)る[しか]ない。

Saifu o nusumareta kara, aruite v. kaeru [shika] nai.

Because my wallet was stolen, I have no choice but to walk home.

SHIMO しも

1. In set patterns such as "mada shimo まだしも" and "ori shimo おりしも"; emphatic. Not translatable.

A) 英語(えいご)ならまだ[しも]、ドイツ語(ご)なんて全然(ぜんぜん)わからないよ。

Eego nara adv.mada [shimo], doitsu-go nan te zenzen wakara-nai yo.

English is one thing, but I don't understand German at all.

B) 夕立(ゆうだち)がやんで、折(おり)[しも]空(そら)に美(うつく)しい虹(にじ)がかかった。

Yuudachi ga yande, n.ori [shimo] sora ni utsukushii niji ga kakatta.

The rainstorm ended, and at that time, a beautiful rainbow appeared across the sky.

2. In the pattern "dare shimo だれしも."

English approximation: "anyone" "everyone"

A) それはだれ[しも]考(かんが)え付(つ)くことだ。

Sore wa n.dare [shimo] kangae-tsuku koto da.

That is something anyone can think of.

B) だれ[しも]死(し)ぬのは恐(こわ)い。

n.Dare [shimo] shinu no wa kowai.

Everyone is afraid of death.

3. In the pattern "kanarazu shimo 必ずしも," followed by a negative; indicates a partial negation.

English approximation: "not necessarily ..."

A) いい大学(だいがく)に入(はい)ったからといって、必(かなら)ず[しも]いい職(しょく)が見(み)つかるとは限(かぎ)らない。

Ii daigaku ni haitta kara to itte, adv.kanarazu [shimo] ii shoku ga mitsukaru to wa kagira-nai.

Just because (you) get into a good university doesn't necessarily mean that (you) can find a good job.

B) きのうまで暖かい日が何日も続いたから、今日も暖かいとは必ず
しも言えないよ。

Kinoo made atatakai hi ga nan-nichi mo tsuzuita kara, kyoo mo atatakai to wa adv. kanarazu shimo ie-nai yo.

Just because it's been warm for several days until yesterday, it can't necessarily be said that it will be warm today.

SURA すら

Cites an extreme example.

English approximation: "(not) even ..."

A) 世界には、三度の食事すら満足に食べられない人がたくさんいるの
だよ。

Sekai ni wa, san-do no n. shokuji sura manzoku ni taberare-nai hito ga takusan iru no da yo.

In the world, there are many people who cannot even get to eat three square meals a day, you know.

B) あの老人は、もう自分の娘すら見分けがつかなくなってしまった。

Ano roojin wa, moo jibun no n. musume sura miwake ga tsuka-naku natte shimatta.

The old man has reached a point where he cannot even tell his daughter apart (from others).

TARA　たら

Often used in the form of "ttara ったら."

1. Casually marks the topic or the subject.

1) Expresses a tone of familiarity or slight criticism. Not translatable.

A) お姉(ねえ)ちゃんっ[たら]、まだ寝(ね)ているよ。

n. Oneechan t[tara], mada nete-iru yo.

She (literally: elder sister) is still in bed!

B) 彼(かれ)っ[たら]、もう新(あたら)しいガールフレンドに夢中(むちゅう)なんだから。

n. Kare t [tara], moo atarashii gaaru-furendo ni muchuu na-n da kara.

He is already head over heels about his new girlfriend.

2) In the pattern "ttara ... nai ったら～ない," expresses surprise at an unusual situation.

English approximation : an emphatic "as for"

A) 三時間(さんじかん)しか寝(ね)てないんだ。眠(ねむ)いっ[たら]ないよ。

San-jikan shika nete-nai-n da. adj. Nemui t[tara]nai yo.

I've only had three hours of sleep. I'm so sleepy! (literally: As for being sleepy, it's like nothing else.)

B) ゆうべの雷(かみなり)っ[たら]今(いま)までになくひどかったのよ。

Yuube no n. kaminari t[tara], ima made ni naku, hidokatta no yo.

As for last night's thunderstorm, it was an unprecedentedly severe one.

2. Indicates a tone of impatience.

1) In getting the attention of the party addressed, marks the pronoun or the proper noun. Not translatable.

A) お兄(にい)ちゃんっ[たら]、早(はや)く学校(がっこう)へ行こうよ。

n. Oniichan t[tara], hayaku gakkoo e ikoo yo.

Oniichan (literally: older brother), let's hurry up and go to school.

B) 面白(おもしろ)いものがあるよ。早(はや)く来(き)てよ、お父(とう)さんっ[たら]。

Omoshiroi mono ga aru yo. Hayaku kite yo, n. otoosan t[tara].

There's something interesting (here). Hurry over, Dad!

2) Placed after a verb, often in an imperative.

English approximation: "(I said) ..., (do ... already!)"

A) みんな待(ま)ってるのよ。早(はや)く帰(かえ)って来(き)なさいっ[たら]。

Min-na matteru no yo. Hayaku v. kaette-kinasai t[tara].

Everyone is waiting, you know. Come home already!

B) まだ二時(にじ)よ。おやつはもっと後(あと)でっ[たら]。

Mada ni-ji yo. Oyatsu wa motto ph. ato de t[tara].

It's only two o'clock. (I said) snacks are to be (eaten) later!

3. Placed at the end of a sentence or clause, expresses an emphatic exclamation. Not translatable.

A) やめてっ[たら]、そんなこと。

v. Yamete t[tara], son-na koto.

Stop doing that! (literally: Cut it out, (doing) something like that!)

B) 今度(こんど)は僕(ぼく)にやらせてっ[たら]。

Kondo wa boku ni v. yarasete t[tara].

Come on, let me do it this time!

TARI　たり

1. Describes simultaneous or consecutive action. Often in a "... tari ... tari ～たり～たり" pattern.

English approximation: "(doing verb) and/while then (doing verb)"

A) クマはおりの中で、行っ[たり]来[たり]していた。

Kuma wa ori no naka de, v. it [tari] v. ki [tari] shite-ita.

The bear was walking back and forth in its cage. (literally: was repeating going then coming.)

B) 少女たちが、飛ん[だり]跳ね[たり]して遊んでいる。

Shoojo-tachi ga, v. ton [dari] v. hane [tari] shite asonde-iru.

The girls are playing, jumping up and down. (literally: The girls playing, leaping and jumping.)

2. Cites one action or condition as one example of others in the category.

English approximation: "such a thing as"

A) こんなに暗くなるまで外で遊んでい[たり]しては、危ないよ。

Kon-na ni kuraku-naru made soto de v. asonde-i [tari] shite wa, abunai yo.

It's dangerous to (do such things as) playing outside until it's this dark.

B) そんな所にごみを捨て[たり]してはいけません。

Son-na tokoro ni gomi o v. sute [tari] shite wa ike-masen.

Don't (do such a thing as) throwing your trash in such a place.

TATTE　たって

1. Following a verb or an adjective, indicates a hypothetical situation.

English approximation: "even if (you) were to ..."

A) 今(いま)ごろ旅行(りょこう)に行(い)こうっ[たって]、どこも満員(まんいん)だよ。

Ima goro ryokoo ni v.ikoo t[tatte], doko mo man-in da yo.

Even if (you) were to want to go on a trip now (i.e. this late), it would be packed with people everywhere (you go).

B) 帰(かえ)りたいと思(おも)っ[たって]、もうバスも電車(でんしゃ)もないよ。

Kaeri-tai to v.omo t[tatte], moo basu mo densha mo nai yo.

Even if you were to think that you want to go home, there are no more buses or trains running.

2. In an emphatic adversative usage. Usually in the form "ttatte ったって."

English approximation: "even though"

A) 少(すこ)しぐらい貯金(ちょきん)があるっ[たって]、いざという時(とき)には役(やく)に立(た)たないね。

Sukoshi gurai chokin ga v.aru t[tatte], iza to yuu toki ni wa yaku ni tata-nai ne.

Even though you have a little bit of savings, when you really need it (i.e. in an emergency), it won't be of any use (don't you think?)

B) 飲(の)むっ[たって]、杯(さかづき)にほんの四杯(よんはい)か五杯(ごはい)だけだよ。

v.Nomu t[tatte], sakazuki ni hon no yon-hai ka go-hai dake da yo.

Even though (I) say (I) drink, I mean only four or five servings in

a sakazuki cup.

TE て

Sometimes found in the "tte って" form.

1. Indicates that two actions occur simultaneously or successively.

English approximation: "do (verb) and ..."

A) お客様ですよ。きちんと座って ごあいさつなさい。

Okyakusama desu yo. Kichin to v. suwa t te goaisatsu nasai.

We have a guest. Sit up straight and say your greetings.

B) 桜の花が散って、若葉が出始めた。

Sakura no hana ga v. chi t te, wakaba ga de-hajimeta.

The cherry blossoms have scattered, and the leaves have begun to appear.

2. Indicates a reason or a cause.

English approximation: "because"

A) あの子は、先生にしかられて泣いている。

Ano ko wa, sensee ni v. shikarare te naite-iru.

That child is crying because (he) was scolded by (his) teacher.

B) 初めて五十メートル泳げた。お母さんに褒められて、とてもうれしかった。

Hajimete go-juu meetoru oyogeta. Okaasan ni v. homerare te, totemo ureshikatta.

I was able to swim fifty meters for the first time. I was very happy because my Mom said she was proud of me.

3. Indicates a method for an action.

English approximation: "by" "with"

A) わたしは、コーヒーにお砂糖とミルクを入れ[て]飲みます。

Watashi wa, koohii ni osatoo to miruku o $_{v.}$ire [te] nomi-masu.

I drink coffee with milk and sugar. (literally: I put milk and sugar in my coffee (and that is the way I) drink coffee.)

B) 遠回りをし[て]行こう。

Toomawari o $_{v.}$shi [te] ikoo.

Let's take the long way around. (literally: Let's go by taking a road out of our way.)

4. As a conjunction, lists items.

English approximation: "and"

A) 彼女は、優しく[て]気さくで、だれにでも好かれる。

Kanojo wa, $_{adj.}$yasashiku [te] kisaku de, dare ni demo sukareru.

She is nice and she is down-to-earth, so (she) is liked by everyone.

B) このみかんは、新しく[て]安く[て]おいしい。

Kono mikan wa, $_{adj.}$atarashiku [te] $_{adj.}$yasuku [te] oishii.

These oranges are fresh and inexpensive, and very good.

5. After a verb, in the pattern "... (t)te ... (t)te ...makuru ～(っ)て～(っ)て～まくる." Emphasizes the action.

English approximation: "... and ..."

A) 原稿の締め切り日が近付いて、彼は書い[て]書い[て]書きまくった。

Genkoo no shimekiri-bi ga chikazuite, kare wa $_{v.}$kai [te] $_{v.}$kai [te] kaki makutta.

As the deadline for the manuscript was approaching, he wrote and

wrote (like crazy).

B) 引出しに入れておいた一万円が見つからない。僕は探し[て]探し[て]探しまくった。

Hikidashi ni irete-oita ichi-man en ga mitsukara-nai. Boku wa v. sagashi [te] v. sagashi [te] sagashi makutta.

I couldn't find the ten thousand yen that I had put in the drawer. I looked and looked (like crazy).

6. In an adversative usage.

English approximation: "even though"

A) 君、そのうわさを知っていて[て]知らないふりをするなんて、なぜなんだい？

Kimi, sono uwasa o v. shitte-i [te] shira-nai furi o suru nan te, naze na-n dai?

Why was it that you pretended not to know about that rumor even though you did?

B) 結婚の約束までしておいて[て]、彼女を見捨てるとは、あんまりじゃないか。

Kekkon no yakusoku made v. shite-oi [te], kanojo o misuteru to wa, anmari ja nai ka.

Isn't it too (cruel) (for you) to abandon her even though (you) had promised to marry her?

7. In the pattern "ni tsuite について," introduces the topic.

English approximation: "concerning" "about"

A) 本日は、日米貿易について[て]討論をいたします。

Honjitsu wa, nichibee-booeki ph. ni tsui [te] tooron o itashi-

masu.

Today, we will hold a debate concerning U.S.-Japan trade.

B) 火山(かざん)がまた活動(かつどう)を始(はじ)めました。道路情報(どうろじょうほう)についてはラジオのニュースをお聞(き)きください。

Kazan ga mata katusdoo o hajime-mashita. Dooro-joohoo ph. ni tsui te wa rajio no nyuusu o okiki kudasai.

The volcano has become active again. Please listen to the news on the radio for (i.e. concerning) road information.

8. Transforms a verb into a gerund by following it. Creates the "te て" verb form. Not translatable.

A) わたしは今顔(いまかお)を洗(あら)って います。

Watashi wa ima kao o v. ara t te i-masu.

I'm now washing (my) face.

B) わたしは宿題(しゅくだい)の論文(ろんぶん)を書(か)いて しまいました。

Watashi wa shukudai no ronbun o v. kai te shimai-mashita.

I've finished writing the essay for homework.

9. In women's language.

1) In the pattern "... (t)te yo ～(っ)てよ." Asserts the speaker's opinion. Not translatable.

A) あら、このスカート、ぴったりあって よ。

Ara, kono sukaato, pittari v. a t te yo.

Look, this skirt fits me perfectly.

B) あの方(かた)、そのお話(はなし)ならもう知(し)っていらして よ。

Ano kata, sono ohanashi nara moo v. shit te irashi te yo.

(If you are talking about) that story, that person already knows

about it.

2) Forms the interrogative. Not translatable.

A) あなた、わたしの言(い)うことわかって？

Anata, watashi no yuu koto v. waka t te ?

Do you understand what I'm saying?

B) そんな高(たか)いとこに登(のぼ)れて？

Son-na takai toko ni v. nobore te ?

Can you climb (some place that is) that high up?

10. Indicates a command or a request. Sometimes in the "te yo てよ" or "te ne てね" pattern. Not translatable.

A) お母(かあ)さん、珍(めずら)しいチョウチョがいるよ。早(はや)く来(き)て。

Okaasan, mezurashii choocho ga iru yo. Hayaku v. ki te .

Mom, there's a rare butterfly. Come (here) quickly!

B) 早(はや)く食(た)べて よ。急(いそ)いでるんだから。

Hayaku v. tabe te yo. Isoideru-n da kara.

Finish eating already! (literally: Eat quickly!) I'm in a rush.

11. Placed at the end of a sentence, in a casual tone.

English approximation: "(I say, think, believe, etc.)"

A) 君(きみ)の病気(びょうき)は必(かなら)ず治(なお)るって。

Kimi no byooki wa kanarazu v. naoru t te .

You will surely get well, (I believe).

B) あなたのやさしさを、あいつもきっとわかるって。

Anata no yasashisa o aitsu mo kitto v. wakaru t te .

That fellow will surely appreciate your kindness, (I am sure).

12. As a variant of "to と," makes a quotation. Not translatable.

A) ここはなん[て]いう町(まち)だろう。

Koko wa $_{n.}$ nan [te] yuu machi daroo.

I wonder what this town is called.

B) お兄(にい)ちゃんは、そんなことは出来(でき)ん[て]言(い)ってたよ。

Oniichan wa, $_{cl.}$ son-na koto wa dekin [te] itteta yo.

My brother said that he couldn't do something like that.

TEBA てば

1. Introduces the topic, with a feeling of familiarity or criticism.

English approximation: "speaking of ..."

A) 木村君(きむらくん)[てば]、インフルエンザでまだ学校(がっこう)休(やす)んでるんだよ。

$_{n.}$ Kimura-kun [teba], infuruenza de mada gakkoo yasunderu-n da yo.

Speaking of Kimura, he is still not going to classes because of the flu, you know.

B) おじいちゃん[てば]、またテレビの前(まえ)で居眠(いねむ)りしているよ。

$_{n.}$ Ojiichan [teba], mata terebi no mae de inemuri shite-iru yo.

Speaking of grandpa, (he) is dozing off in front of the TV again.

2. Placed at the end of a sentence, gives it a tone of impatience.

English approximation: "(I said)"

A) お夕飯(ゆうはん)できたわよ。熱(あつ)いうちに食(た)べないと冷(さ)めちゃうっ[てば]。

Oyuuhan dekita wa yo. Atsui uchi ni tabe-nai to $_{v.}$ samechau t [teba].

Dinner's ready! If you don't come quickly, it will get cold, (I said).

B) わかったよ。すぐ行くって**てば**。

Wakatta yo. sugu $_{v.}$iku t[**teba**]**.**

All right, I'll be right there, (I said).

TEMO(DEMO) ても(でも)

"Temo ても" preceded by a word ending in "n ん"sound changes into "demo でも." See **4.** B) below as an example.

1. Gives an extreme case and negates it.

English approximation: "no matter ..."

A) どんなに高く**ても**その絵を買いたい。

Don-na ni $_{adj.}$takaku [**temo**] **sono e o kai-tai.**

No matter how expensive the painting is, I want to buy it.

B) 今はどんなに悲しく**ても**、いつかは乗り越えられるよ。

Ima wa don-na ni $_{adj.}$kanashiku [**temo**]**, itsuka wa nori-koerareru yo.**

No matter how sad you might be now, someday you will be able to get over it.

2. Shows that regardless of a given condition or action, something occurs.

English approximation: "despite" "regardless of"

A) この単語、なんべん辞書をひい**ても**すぐ意味を忘れてしまう。

Kono tango, nanben jisho o $_{v.}$hii [**temo**] **sugu imi o wasurete shimau.**

Regardless of how many times I look up this word, I always forget its meaning right away.

B) じっと寝ていても、腰の痛いのが治らない。

Jitto v. nete-i temo, koshi no itai no ga naora-nai.

Despite the fact that I'm lying still, my lower back pain isn't getting any better.

3. In an emphatic usage, indicates the possible limit.

English approximation: "at most" "at least"

A) この小包みは重くても五キロはないでしょう。

Kono kozutsumi wa adj. omoku temo go-kiro wa nai deshoo.

This package weighs at most five kilograms (and is probably less).

B) その本は安くても五千円はするでしょう。

Sono hon wa adj. yasuku temo go-sen en wa suru deshoo.

That book will cost at least five thousand yen.

4. In a sentence granting permission. Not translatable.

A) もうお乳を飲ませたから、赤ちゃんを抱いてくださってもいいですよ。

Moo ochichi o nomaseta kara, akachan o v. daite kudasa t temo ii desu yo.

I gave it some milk already, so it's all right for you to hold the baby.

B) この薬なら、ミルクと一緒に飲んでも構いませんよ。

Kono kusuri nara, miruku to issho ni v. non demo kamaimasen yo.

It would be fine (for you) to take this medication with milk.

TE-NE　て-ね　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "te て" and "ne ね." Also used in the form of "de ne でね." Usually found in women's and children's language, it is used in making a request with a familiar tone. It is the informal variant of the gerund form of a verb plus "kudasai ください."

English approximation: "please" "would you ...?"

A) お母さん、あしたの遠足、お握り作って[てね]。

Okaasan, ashita no ensoku, onigiri v. tsuku t[te ne].

Mom, could you make rice balls for tomorrow's school trip?

B) 今夜は早く帰ってき[てね]、真理子の誕生日だから。

Konya wa hayaku v. kaette-ki [te ne], mariko no tanjoobi dakara.

Please come home early tonight, it's Mariko's birthday.

TE-WA　て-は　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "te て" and "wa は." Also in the form "de wa では."

1. Gives a hypothetical situation followed by its result. Often implies that the hypothetical situation is undesirable.

English approximation: "if (I) were to ..."

A) 八時の電車に乗り遅れ[ては]、会議に間に合わない。

Hachi-ji no densha ni v. nori-okure [te wa], kaigi ni maniawa-nai.

If (I) were to miss the eight o'clock train, (I) wouldn't make it in

time for the meeting.

B) 今(いま)から始(はじ)め[ては]、遅(おく)れてしまう。

Ima kara v. hajime [te wa], okurete shimau.

If (I) were to start now, I would be late.

2. Links something that has already happened to another situation, condition or action.

English approximation: (a comma)

A) こんなにたくさんお土産(みやげ)をいただい[ては]申(もう)し訳(わけ)ありません。

Kon-na ni takusan omiyage o v. itadai [te wa] mooshiwake-arimasen.

You brought so many souvenirs, you really shouldn't have.

B) そんなに頼(たの)まれ[ては]いやとは言(い)えないね。

Son-na ni v. tanomare [te wa] iya to wa ie-nai ne.

You beg me this much, I cannot say no.

3. Indicates a situation or a condition that is sure to give rise to the result described in the second clause.

English approximation: "with" "when"

A) 早(はや)まっ[ては]、損(そん)をするだけだ。

v. Hayama t [te wa], son o suru dake da.

When (you) rush into things, you will only lose out.

B) 赤(あか)ん坊(ぼう)が生(う)まれ[ては]、君(きみ)も忙(いそが)しくなるね。

Akanboo ga v. umare [te wa], kimi mo isogashiku naru ne.

With the baby born, you'll be busy, (won't you).

4. In describing a repeated combination of actions, links the first action to the second.

English approximation: "keep doing ..."

A) 彼(かれ)は、小石(こいし)を拾(ひろ)っ[ては]投(な)げ拾(ひろ)っ[ては]投(な)げていた。

Kare wa, koishi o $_{v.}$hiro t[te wa] nage $_{v.}$hiro t[te wa] nagete-ita.

He kept picking up a pebble and throwing it.

B) あしたは遠足(えんそく)なのに、今夜(こんや)は雨(あめ)。ともちゃんは、空(そら)を見上(みあ)げ[ては]ため息(いき)をついている。

Ashita wa ensoku na noni, konya wa ame. Tomo-chan wa, sora o $_{v.}$miage [te wa] tameiki o tsuite-iru.

Tomorrow is the school trip, but it's raining tonight. Tomo keeps looking up at the sky and sighing.

TO と

1. The most basic function of "to と" is to list nouns, noun phrases and noun clauses. Note that another particle "ya や" has a similar function, but its usage is slightly different (see "ya や," p. 241).

1) Lists concrete and abstract things.

English approximation: "and"

A) りんご[と]ぶどうがテーブルの上(うえ)にあります。

$_{n.}$Ringo (word) [to] $_{n.}$budoo (word) ga teeburu no ue ni ari-masu.

There are apple(s) and grape(s) on the table.

B) 赤(あか)いりんご[と]緑(みどり)のぶどうもテーブルの上(うえ)にあります。

$_{n.}$Akai ringo (phrase) [to] $_{n.}$midori no budoo (phrase) mo teeburu no ue ni ari-masu.

There are also red apples and green grapes on the table.

C) わたしが買ったりんご[と]あなたが買ったぶどうはテーブルの上にあります。

n. Watashi ga katta ringo (clause) [to] n. anata ga katta budoo (clause) wa teeburu no ue ni ari-masu.

2) Often in the "(noun) to (noun) to ～と～と" pattern, contrasts or compares the two nouns.

English approximation: "and" "or" "between"

A) スキムミルク[と]普通のミルク[と]どちらを買いましょうか？

Sukimu n. miruku [to] futsuu no n. miruku [to] dochira o kai-mashoo ka?

Which should I buy, skim milk or regular milk?

B) 夏[と]冬[と]では気温は大変違います。

n. Natsu [to] n. fuyu [to] de wa kion wa taihen chigai-masu.

Between summer and winter, there is a great difference in temperature.

C) 谷君の書いた作文[と]北川君の書いた作文[と]あなたはどちらのほうが好きですか？

n. ph. Tani-kun no kaita sakubun [to] n. ph. kitagawa-kun no kaita sakubun [to] anata wa dochira no hoo ga suki desu ka?

Which do you like better, the composition written by Tani or the one by Kitagawa?

D) あれからもう二十年か、この街も昔[と]随分変ったね。

Are kara moo nijuu-nen ka, kono machi mo n. mukashi [to]

zuibun kawatta ne.

Twenty years have passed since then. This town has changed a lot (since then).

* Note that although "to と" functions like the English "and," it cannot connect two separate sentences, nor can it stand alone at the beginning of a sentence. "Soshite そして" must be used in these cases instead.

a) The sentence: "I wrote a letter, and you wrote a letter (also)" must be translated as "Watashi wa tegami o kaki-mashita. Soshite, anata mo tegami o kaki-mashita. わたしは手紙を書きました。そして、あなたも手紙を書きました." It can never be: "Watashi wa tegami o kaki-mashita. To, anata mo tegami o kaki-mashita. わたしは手紙を書きました。~~と~~、あなたも手紙を書きました."

b) The sentence: "And, after that, (she) sat down." must be translated as "Soshite, sono ato, suwatta. そして、その後, 座った." It can never be: "to, sono ato, suwatta. ~~と~~、その後, 座った."

Therefore, do not get into the habit of always translating "and" as "to と." Make sure that you think about its usage first.

2. Indicates that the speaker carried out an action together with the subject who is marked off by this particle.

English approximation: "with" "accompanied by"

A) きのうは、弟 [と] 川へ泳ぎに行きました。

Kinoo wa, n. otooto [to] kawa e oyogi ni iki-mashita.

Yesterday, I went swimming in the river with my brother.

今日お昼に、僕はお父さん [と] お母さん [と] ハンバーガーを食べました。

Kyoo ohiru ni, boku wa n. otoosan [to] n. okaasan [to] han-baagaa o tabe-mashita.

Today for lunch, I had a hamburger with my father and my mother.

C) 北島(きたじま)さんは来月(らいげつ) 南田(みなみだ)さん[と]結婚(けっこん)します。

Kitajima-san wa raigetsu n. minamida-san [to] kekkon-shimasu.

Kitajima is going to marry Minamida next month.

3. After a noun.

1) Indicates that an action which follows is performed in a struggle against something.

English approximation: "against"

A) 彼(かれ)は恐怖(きょうふ)[と]戦(たたか)って、ついに勝(か)った。

Kare wa n. kyoofu [to] tatakatte, tsui ni katta.

He fought against his fears, and he finally conquered them.

B) 水野君(みずのくん)はいろいろな困難(こんなん)[と]戦(たたか)って、ついに優勝(ゆうしょう)した。

Mizuno-kun wa iro-iro na n. kon-nan [to] tatakatte, tsui ni yuushoo-shita.

Mizuno, after struggling against many obstacles, finally won first place.

2) Precedes certain incomplete intransitive verb such as "call ... (...to yobu ～と呼(よ)ぶ)," "become ... (...to naru ～となる), "name ... (...to nazukeru ～と名付(なづ)ける)." The noun preceding "to と" becomes the complement of the verb. Not translatable.

A) 竹下君(たけしたくん)は工学部(こうがくぶ)の学生(がくせい)[と]なった。

Takeshita-kun wa koogakubu no n. gakusee [to] natta.

Takeshita became a student in the engineering department.

B) 友達(ともだち)は僕(ぼく)のことをタッちゃん[と]呼(よ)びます。

Tomodachi wa boku no koto o $_{n.}$ tacchan [to] yobi-masu.

My friends call me Tacchan.

C) 新(あたら)しい喫茶店(きっさてん)の名前(なまえ)を「ドリーム」[と]つけました。

Atarashii kissaten no namae o "$_{n.}$ doriimu" [to] tsuke-mashita.

We named the new coffee shop "Dream."

3) Indicates that something reaches/reached a goal or a new state. Not translatable.

A) いよいよ運動会(うんどうかい)の日(ひ)[と]なりました。

Iyo-iyo undoo-kai no $_{n.}$ hi [to] nari-mashita.

At last the field day has come.

B) クリスマスの街頭募金(がいとうぼきん)は全部(ぜんぶ)で百万円(ひゃくまんえん)[と]なった。

Kurisumasu no gaitoo-bokin wa zenbu de $_{n.}$ hyaku-man en [to] natta.

The total amount of donations collected on the streets during the Christmas season reached one million yen.

C) あの広場(ひろば)は子供達(こどもたち)の公園(こうえん)[と]なった。

Ano hiroba wa kodomo-tachi no $_{n.}$ kooen [to] natta.

That field has now been made into a playground for children.

4) After a quantity or a number, indicates that something can be done in less than that quantity or number. Also, emphasizes the negative.

English approximation: "(not) as much as" "never (not even once)"

A) そんな仕事(しごと)は三日(みっか)[と]かかりません。

Son-na shigoto wa $_{n.}$ mik-ka [to] kakari-masen.

It wouldn't take more than three days to do that kind of work.

B) ひまわりの種をまいてから、一週間 と たたないうちに芽が出てきました。

Himawari no tane o maite kara, n. is-shuukan to tata-nai uchi ni me ga dete-kimashita.

The sunflower seeds sprouted in less than a week after I planted them.

C) もう二度 と あんな所へは行かない。

Moo n. ni-do to an-na tokoro e wa ika-nai.

I'm never again going to go to a place like that.

4. In the patterns "... (a verb) yoo to ... mai to ～(よ)うと～まいと," "... (a noun) であろうと～(で)なかろうと," and "... (an adj.) かろうと～なかろうと."

English approximation: "(whether) ... or not"

A) 君が信じよう と 信じまい と、それは本当に起こったんだよ。

Kimi ga v. shinji-yoo to v. shinji-mai to, sore wa hontoo ni okotta-n da yo.

Believe it or not, that really happened, you know.

B) それが事実であろう と なかろう と、わたしは構わない。

Sore ga jijitsu c. de aroo to adj. nakaroo to, watashi wa kama-wanai.

Whether it's true or not, it doesn't matter to me.

D) 大きかろう と 小さかろう と 味さえよければいい。

adj. Ookikaroo to adj. chiisakaroo to aji sae yokere ba ii.

Whether it's big or small, I don't care as long as it tastes good.

5. As a quotation particle, introduces a clause or a phrase.

English approximation: "that" or a comma

Some examples of verbs that introduce a quoted clause are:

... to hanasu ～と話す (tell that ...)

... to yuu ～と言う (say that ...)

... to kangaeru ～と考える (consider that ...)

... to omou ～と思う (think that ...)

... to soozoo-suru ～と想像する (imagine that ...)

... to wakaru ～とわかる (understand that ...)

A) いつかは大地震があるだろう [と] 思う。

cl. Itsuka wa daijishin ga aru daroo [to] omou.

I think that someday, there will be a big earthquake.

B) 期末テストは二週間先 [と] 決った。

cl. Kimatsu-tesuto wa ni-shuukan saki [to] kimatta.

It's been decided that the final exam is going to be in two weeks.

C) お化けか [と] 思ったら、柳の木だよ。

cl. Obake ka [to] omottara, yanagi no ki da yo.

I thought that it was a ghost, but it's (merely) a willow tree.

D) マラソンは苦しかったが、友達に遅れまい [と] 一生懸命走った。

Marason wa kurushikatta ga, cl. tomodachi ni okure-mai [to] isshoo-kenmee hashitta.

The marathon was very hard; determined that I wasn't going to fall behind my friends, I ran the best I could.

F) お店は今日は開いていないよ。ほら、「本日休業」 [と] 出ているでしょう。

Omise wa kyoo wa aite-inai yo. Hora, ph."honjitsu kyuugyoo" [to] dete-iru deshoo.

The store isn't open today. See, there is a sign that says "closed for today."

6. Follows a mimesis, an onomatopoeic adverb.

English approximation: "in the manner of"

A) そこにじっ[と]座(すわ)っていなさい。

Soko ni m.ji t[to] suwatte i-nasai.

You sit still there. (literally: There, in the manner of stillness, keep sitting.)

B) 廊下(ろうか)をバタバタ[と]走(はし)ってはいけません。

Rooka o o.bata-bata [to] hashitte wa ike-masen.

You should not run down the hall making lots of noise. (literally: Down the hall, in the manner of making lots of noise, you should not run.)

C) ゴロゴロ[と]雷(かみなり)がなっている。

o.Goro-goro [to] kaminari ga natte-iru.

Thunder is rumbling. (literally: In a rumbling manner, the thunder is making noise.)

D) 大(おお)きな木(き)がどさっ[と]倒(たお)れた。

Ookina ki ga o.dosa t[to] taoreta.

A huge tree fell down with a thud. (literally: A huge tree, in the manner of a "thud," fell down.)

7. Placed after a verb, indicates that the action/condition described in the clause preceding it immediately initiated another action/condition.

English approximation: "when" "as soon as"

A) 先生が教室に入って来る[と]、生徒たちはあわてて席に着いた。

Sensee ga kyooshitsu ni $_{v.}$haitte-kuru [to], seeto-tachi wa awatete seki ni tsuita.

As soon as the teacher entered the classroom, the students took their seats in a hurry.

B) 僕が学校に着く[と]、友達が大勢寄ってきた。

Boku ga gakkoo ni $_{v.}$tsuku [to], tomodachi ga oozee yotte-kita.

As soon as I got to school, many of my friends came over to me.

C) 幕が上がる[と]、観客は水を打ったように静かになった。

Maku ga $_{v.}$agaru [to], kankyaku wa mizu o utta yoo ni shizuka ni natta.

When the curtain went up, the audience became completely silent.

D) 雪が降り始める[と]、動物たちは冬眠を始める。

Yuki ga $_{v.}$furi-hajimeru [to], doobutsu-tachi wa toomin o hajimeru.

When the snow starts to fall, animals go into hibernation.

8. Placed after an adjective or a verb, creates a conditional.

English approximation: "if" "when"

A) あんまり安い[と]かえって心配だ。

Anmari $_{adj.}$yasui [to] kaette shinpai da.

If it's too cheap, then that makes me worry.

B) 君が来ない[と]つまらないなあ。

Kimi ga $_{v.}$ko-nai [to] tsumaranai naa.

It'll be boring if you don't come.

C) この古(ふる)い戸、こわれる[と]いけないから早(はや)く直(なお)しましょう。

Kono furui to, v. kowareru [to] ikenai kara hayaku naoshi-mashoo.

Let's fix this old door before it breaks. (literally: As for this door, it won't be good if it were to break, so let's fix it soon.)

D) 雨(あめ)が降(ふ)る[と]、水不足(みずぶそく)が解消(かいしょう)するのですが。

Ame ga v. furu [to], mizu-busoku ga kaishoo-suru no desu ga.

If it were to rain, the water shortage would be solved, but ...

E) あのうどん屋(や)に行(い)く[と]、おいしいうどんが食(た)べられるよ。

Ano udon-ya ni v. iku [to], oishii udon ga taberareru yo.

If you go to that noodle restaurant, you can have great udon (noodles).

9. In the pattern "ari to arayuru.... ありとあらゆる～"

English approximation: "every possible (thing/method)"

デパートにはあり[と]あらゆる品物(しなもの)が並(なら)んでいる。

Depaato ni wa ari [to] arayuru shinamono ga narande-iru.

Everything that you can think of is available in a department store.

10. In the pattern "... to naku ... to naku ～となく～となく," describes a ceaseless action.

English approximation: "without ... or ..."

彼(かれ)は昼(ひる)[と]なく夜(よる)[と]なく働(はたら)いた。

Kare wa n. hiru [to] naku n. yoru [to] naku hataraita.

He worked all day long. (literally: without day or night)

TO-IE-BA　と-いえ-ば　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "ba ば" and the verb "ie いえ," from "yuu いう (to say)." Introduces the topic casually.

English approximation: "speaking of ..."

A) ああ、三井君(みついくん)[といえば]、さっき廊下(ろうか)で会(あ)ったよ。

Aa, n. mitsui-kun [to ie ba], sakki rooka de atta yo.

Oh, speaking of Mitsui, (I) saw him in the hallway awhile ago.

B) 滝(たき)[といえば]、なんといってもナイアガラだね。

n. Taki [to ie ba], nan to itte mo naiagara da ne.

Speaking of waterfalls, it's definitely Niagara Falls (that's the best), no question.

TO-II　と-いい　Combination particle

A combination of the particle "to と" and the verb "ii いい," from "yuu いう (to say)." In the pattern "... to ii ... to ii ～といい～といい," lists two or more items and establishes them as the topic, to be followed by a comment.

English approximation: "as for ... and ..."

A) あの店(みせ)のステーキは、味(あじ)[といい]値段(ねだん)[といい]いうことないね。

Ano mise no suteeki wa, n. aji [to ii] n. nedan [to ii] yuu koto nai ne.

The steak at that restaurant, (as for its) taste and price, it's perfect.

B) 長谷川(はせがわ)さんは、勉強(べんきょう)[といい]スポーツ[といい]いつでもトップなのよ。

Hasegawa-san wa, n. benkyoo [to ii] n. supootsu [to ii] itsu-demo toppu na no yo.

Hasegawa, (in) studies and sports, is always the best one (in the group).

TO-ITTA と-いった Combination particle

A combination of the particle "to と" and the verb "itta いった," from "yuu いう (to say)." Lists two or more items.

English approximation: "such as"

A) 日本(にほん)のお土産(みやげ)なら、真珠(しんじゅ)や七宝(しっぽう)[といった]アクセサリーもいいでしょう。

Nihon no omiyage nara, ph. shinju ya shippoo [to itta] akusesarii mo ii deshoo.

In terms of souvenirs from Japan, accessories such as pearls and cloisonne are probably suitable, too.

B) うちの娘(むすめ)は、数学(すうがく)や理科(りか)[といった]科目(かもく)が得意(とくい)です。

Uchi no musume wa, ph. suugaku ya rika [to itta] kamoku ga tokui desu.

Our daughter is good at subjects such as math and science.

TO-ITTE と-いって Combination particle

A combination of the particle "to と" and the verb "itte いって," from "yuu いう (to say)." In an adversative usage at the beginning of a sentence.

English approximation: "however"

A) 急げば十時のバスに間に合いそうだ。[といって]走るのはいやだ。次のバスにしよう。

Isoge ba juu-ji no basu ni mani-ai soo da. [To itte] hashiru no wa iya da. Tsugi no basu ni shi yoo.

If (I) rush, it looks like I might be able to make the ten o'clock bus. However, I don't want to run. I'll (catch) the next bus.

B) 日本は、確かに経済大国になった。[といって]、国民一人一人の暮らしが豊かになったわけではない。

Nihon wa, tashika ni keezai-taikoku ni natta. [To itte], kokumin hitori hitori no kurashi ga yutaka ni natta wake de wa nai.

Japan has certainly become an "economic giant." However, that doesn't mean that the standard of living of each member of society has increased significantly.

TO-IWA-ZU と-いわ-ず Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "zu ず," and the verb "iwa(-nai) いわ(ない)," from "yuu いう (to say)."

1. A negative imperative that influences a quotation.

English approximation: "don't say that ..."

A) もうへとへとだなど[といわず]に頑張って。ほら、もうすぐだよ。

Moo heto-heto da p. nado [to iwazu] ni ganbatte. Hora, moo sugu da yo.

Don't say things like you're completely worn out; just hang in there.

Look, we're almost there.

B) あきらめた[といわず]、もう一度(いちど)先生(せんせい)に相談(そうだん)してみたらいいんじゃない？

v. Akirameta [to iwazu], moo ichido sensee ni soodan shite mitara ii-n ja nai?

Don't say that you've given up; why don't you (literally: wouldn't it be better if you) talk to your teacher about it again?

2. In the pattern "... to iwa zu ... to iwa zu ～といわず～といわず," indicates an all-inclusiveness.

English approximation: "not only all ..., but ..."

A) 手(て)[といわず]足(あし)[といわず]、体(からだ) 中蚊(じゅうか)にささされた。

n. Te [to iwa zu] n. ashi [to iwa zu], karada-juu ka ni sasareta.

Not just all over my hands and feet, but I was bitten by mosquitoes all over my body.

B) 彼(かれ)は、朝(あさ)[といわず]夜(よる)[といわず]、暇(ひま)さえあれば漫画(まんが)を読(よ)んでいる。

Kare wa, n. asa [to iwa zu] n. yoru [to iwa zu], hima sae are ba manga o yonde-iru.

Not just in the morning and in the evening, but he reads comics whenever he has time.

TOKA　とか

1. Lists several items.

English approximation: "such as ... and ... (and ..., etc.)"

A) みよちゃんは、ピアノ[とか]絵(え)[とか]お習字(しゅうじ)[とか]たくさんおけいこ

にいっているのよ。

Miyo-chan wa, n. piano [toka] n. e [toka] n. oshuuji [toka] ta-kusan okeeko ni itte-iru no yo.

Miyo is taking many lessons such as piano, drawing, and calligraphy, you know.

B) テレビばかり見ていないで、少しは弟の面倒を見る[とか]、犬を散歩に連れていく[とか]、しなさいよ。

Terebi bakari mite-inai de, sukoshi wa otooto no mendoo o v. miru [toka], inu o sanpo ni v. tsurete-iku [toka], shi-nasai yo.

Instead of watching TV all the time, why don't you at least do something like look after your little brother or take the dog out for a walk?

2. Conveys uncertainty, often due to its hearsay nature.

English approximation: "something like ..., (I hear)"

A) あの家は、一億円[とか]で売れたそうですよ。

Ano ie wa, n. ichi-oku en [toka] de ureta soo desu yo.

That house was sold for something like one hundred million yen, I hear.

B) 喬君のおじいさんは、百いくつ[とか]で、まだ英語を教えているんですって。

Takashi-kun no ojiisan wa, n. hyaku ikutsu [toka] de mada eego o oshiete-iru-n desu-tte.

Takashi's grandfather is something like a hundred-odd years old, and is still teaching English, I hear.

TOKORO　ところ

Shows that two events occurred successively.

English approximation: "when"

A) うちへ帰ってみた[ところ]、合格通知が届いていた。

Uchi e v. kaette-mita [tokoro], gookaku-tsuuchi ga todoite-ita.

When I came home, (I found that) the acceptance letter had been delivered.

B) 人事部に聞いてみた[ところ]、部長のロンドン転勤は本当だとわかった。

Jinji-bu ni v. kiite-mita [tokoro], buchoo no rondon tenkin wa hontoo da to wakatta.

When I asked the personnel division, I found that it was true that our director would be transferred to London.

TOKORODE　ところで

Poses a hypothetical situation. The tone is pessimistic, implying that even if that something were to happen, an undesirable situation would still exist in reality.

English approximation: "even if (you) were to ..."

A) 嘆いてみた[ところで]、なくしたビデオカメラは戻っては来ないさ。

v. Nageite-mita [tokorode], nakushita bideo-kamera wa modotte wa ko-nai sa.

Even if you were to grieve, the camcorder that you lost won't come

back.

B) 今電話した[ところで]、彼はまだ留守でしょう。

Ima v. denwa-shita [tokorode], kare wa mada rusu deshoo.

Even if you were to call now, he's probably still out.

TOKORO-E ところ-へ Combination particle

A combination of the noun "tokoro ところ (a place/an occasion)" and the particle "e へ." Indicates that as one action was being carried out, by chance, something else happened.

English approximation: "just when ..."

A) わたしが宿題を始めようとしている[ところへ]、村田さんが遊びに来た。

Watashi ga shukudai o hajime-yoo to v. shite-iru [tokoro e], murata-san ga asobi ni kita.

Just when I was about to start doing my homework, Murata came over for a visit.

B) 大雨がやんだ[ところへ]、山崩れが起きた。

Oo-ame ga v. yanda [tokoro e], yama-kuzure ga okita.

Just when the rainstorm had ended, there was a landslide.

TOKOROGA ところが

Indicates that although the speaker was anticipating one result which is described in the first clause, the real result was unexpectedly negative.

English approximation: "but"

A) おいしそうなイチゴなので、たくさん買った**ところが**、箱の下の方のはだいぶ腐っていた。

Oishi-soona ichigo na node, takusan v. katta tokoroga, hako no shita no hoo no wa daibu kusatte-ita.

The strawberries looked good, so I bought a lot, but many of the ones at the bottom of the box were rotten.

B) 朝お天気だったから傘を持たずに出かけた**ところが**、午後になって土砂降りになった。

Asa otenki datta kara kasa o motazu ni v. dekaketa tokoroga, gogo ni natte dosha-buri ni natta.

I went out without an umbrella because it was nice out this morning, but in the afternoon, there was a downpour.

TOKORO-O　ところ-を

Indicates that something unexpected has happened or is happening.

Colloquial form: "toko-o とこを."

English approximation: "although (usually) ..."

A) 主人は、いつもなら十時には帰って来る**ところを**、今夜はまだ帰らない。

Shujin wa, itsumo nara juu-ji ni wa v. kaette-kuru tokoro-o, kon-ya wa mada kaera-nai.

Although my husband usually comes home before ten o'clock, he hasn't come home yet tonight.

B) いつもの年(とし)なら、今(いま)ごろは山(やま)は雪(ゆき)で白(しろ)くなる ところを 、今年(ことし)は暖(あたた)かくてまだ全然雪(ぜんぜんゆき)がありません。

Itsumo no toshi nara, imagoro wa yama wa yuki de v. shiroku-naru tokoro-o, kotoshi wa atatakaku te mada yuki ga ari-masen.

Although usually at this point, the mountains turn white with snow, this year, it's warm and there is still no snow at all.

C) いつもなら七時(しちじ)には起(お)きる とこを 、今朝(けさ)は目覚(めざま)し時計(どけい)が故障(こしょう)して、寝坊(ねぼう)してしまった。

Itsumo nara shichi-ji ni wa v. okiru toko-o, kesa wa mezamashi-dokee ga koshoo shite, neboo-shite shimatta.

Although usually I get up at seven o'clock, the alarm clock was broken this morning and I overslept.

TOMO　とも

1. In the patterns such as "don-na ni ... tomo どんなに～とも," "doreda-ke ... tomo どれだけ～とも," expresses an absolute determination.

English approximation: "no matter ..."

A) ゴールまであと一回(ひとまわ)りだ。どんなに苦(くる)しく とも 頑張(がんば)って走(はし)るぞ。

Gooru made ato hito-mawari da. Don-na ni adj. kurushiku tomo ganbatte hashiru zo.

One more lap until the finish line. No matter how hard it may be, I'll give it my best and run.

B) どれだけ時間(じかん)がかかろう とも 、この仕事(しごと)だけはやってしまわなけれ

ばならない。

Doredake jikan ga $_{v.}$kakaroo [tomo], kono shigoto dake wa yatte shimawa-nakere ba nara nai.

No matter how long it may take, I absolutely have to finish doing at least this job.

2. After an adjective, indicates an approximate limit.

English approximation: "at least" "at most"

A) 遅く[とも]来週までにはお返事をください。

$_{adj.}$Osoku [tomo] raishuu made ni wa ohenji o kudasai.

Please give me an answer by next week at the latest.

B) 部屋を探しているんですが、少なく[とも]六畳は欲しいと思います。

Heya o sagashite-iru-n desu ga, $_{adj.}$sukunaku [tomo] roku-joo wa hoshii to omoi-masu.

I'm looking for a room, and I'd like one that has at least six-tatami mats.

3. At the end of a sentence, strongly and curtly expresses a decision or statement of fact.

English approximation: "..., all right."

A) 「君、本当にＵＦＯを見たのか？」「見た[とも]。」

"Kimi hontoo ni UFO o mita no ka?" "$_{v.}$Mita [tomo]."

"You really saw a UFO?" "I saw it, all right."

B) 君の聞き違いだ[とも]。僕がそんなこと言うわけないだろ？

Kimi no kiki-chigai $_{c.}$da [tomo]. Boku ga son-na koto yuu wake nai daro?

You misheard me, all right. You know there's no way I'd say

something like that!

TO-MO　と-も　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "mo も." Emphasizes the preceding noun. Not translatable.

A) 明日(あす)アメリカにたちます。あなた[とも]当分(とうぶん)お目(め)にかかれませんが、どうかお元気(げんき)で。

Asu amerika ni tachi-masu. n. Anata [to mo] toobun ome ni kakare-masen ga, dooka ogenki de.

I'm leaving for the U.S. tomorrow. I won't be seeing you for a long time, but please take care of yourself.

B) 警官(けいかん)[とも]あろう人(ひと)が、盗(ぬす)みを働(はたら)いたとはねえ。

n. Keekan [to mo] aroo hito ga, nusumi o hataraita to wa nee.

(Can you believe that) a policeman (literally: someone who is a policeman) committed a theft!

TO-MO-ARE　と-も-あれ　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "mo も," and "are あれ," from the verb "aru ある (to be/exist)."

1. After a noun or a nominal followed by "wa は," plays down its importance.

English approximation: "putting aside ..." "never mind ..."

A) 行(い)き先(さき)は[ともあれ]、今年(ことし)こそは海外旅行(かいがいりょこう)をしようよ。

Ikisaki $_{p.}$wa to mo are, kotoshi koso wa kaigai-ryokoo o shi-yoo yo.

Putting aside the (issue of the) destination (for the time being), let's (agree to) finally go on a trip overseas this year.

B) 言い訳は ともあれ、もっと勉強しないと希望する学校に入れないよ。

Iiwake $_{p.}$wa to mo are, motto benkyoo shi-nai to kiboo-suru gakkoo ni haire-nai yo.

Never mind excuses; if you don't study more, you won't be able to get into the school of your choice.

2. In the pattern "nani wa to mo are 何はともあれ."

English approximation: "in any case ..."

A) 「うわぁ、おいしそうなケーキ！」「今いただいたのよ。何は ともあれ、早速いただきましょうよ。」

"Uwaa, oishi-soona keeki!" "Ima itadaita no yo. $_{ph.}$Nani wa to mo are, sassoku itadaki-mashoo yo."

"Wow, that cake looks good!" "(Someone) just gave it to us. In any case, let's go ahead and eat it now."

B) 何は ともあれ、全ては明日のことにして、今日のところは寝ることにしましょう。

$_{ph.}$Nani wa to mo are, subete wa asu no koto ni shite, kyoo no tokoro wa neru koto ni shi-mashoo.

In any case, let's leave everything for tomorrow, and go to bed for tonight.

TO-SHI-TE　と-し-て　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "te て," and "shi し," from the verb "suru する (to do)."

1. Indicates a position or a circumstance.

English approximation: "as"

A) 今度(こんど)の水泳大会(すいえいたいかい)には、早川(はやかわ)さんが学校代表選手(がっこうだいひょうせんしゅ)[として]選(えら)ばれました。

Kondo no suiee-taikai ni wa, hayakawa-san ga n. **gakkoo-dai-hyoo-senshu [to shi te] erabare-mashita.**

For the coming swim meet, Hayakawa was chosen as the athlete representing our school.

B) ジョン万次郎(まんじろう)は、日本人(にほんじん)[として]初(はじ)めて、アメリカで教育(きょういく)を受(う)けた。

Jon manjiroo wa, n. **nihonjin [to shi te] hajimete, amerika de kyooiku o uketa.**

John Manjiro was the first Japanese person (literally: the first person as a Japanese) to receive an education in the U.S.

2. Sets aside a topic for the time being.

English approximation: "let's leave the ..."

A) 話(はなし)は後(あと)でする[として]、まず食事(しょくじ)にしましょう。

Hanashi wa ato de v. **suru [to shi te], mazu shokuji ni shi-mashoo.**

Let's leave talking for later, and eat first.

B) そのうわさはそれ[として]、彼(かれ)についてはまだいろいろと話(はなし)があるんだよ。

Sono uwasa wa n. sore [to shi te], kare ni tsuite wa mada iro-iro to hanashi ga aru-n da yo.

That rumor aside, I have many other stories about him, you know.

3. Followed by a negative in the sentence or clause, shows that there are no exceptions to a category.

English approximation: "not even ..."

A) 一人(ひとり)[として]この問題(もんだい)が解けた学生(がくせい)はいませんでした。

n. Hitori [to shi te] kono mondai ga toketa gakusee wa i-masen deshita.

There was not even one, among the students, who could solve this problem.

B) 僕(ぼく)は、一日(いちにち)[として]彼女(かのじょ)のことを思(おも)わない日(ひ)はない。

Boku wa, n. ichi-nichi [to shi te] kanojo no koto o omowa-nai hi wa nai.

There isn't a single day that I don't think about her.

TO-SHITE-MO と-して-も Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "mo も," and "shite して," from the verb "suru する (to do)."

1. Indicates that a position or a circumstance is the same as that which was mentioned in a previous sentence.

English approximation: "as for ..., also/too ..."

A) わたし[としても]、あなたの悩(なや)みはよくわかります。同(おな)じような経験(けいけん)がありますから。

n. Watashi [to shite mo], anata no nayami wa yoku wakari-masu. Onaji-yoona keeken ga ari-masu kara.

As for me, too, I understand your worries. I've also had similar experiences.

B) ＰＴＡ[としても]、授業料(じゅぎょうりょう)の値上(ねあ)げは、問題(もんだい)だと考(かんが)えます。

n. PTA [to shite mo], jugyoo-ryoo no ne-age wa, mondai da to kangae-masu.

As for the PTA, (we) too, think that the increase in tuition is a problem.

2. Establishes a hypothetical situation.

English approximation: "even if (you) were to ..."

A) わたしはその案(あん)には賛成(さんせい)する[としても]、お金(かね)は今(いま)は出(だ)せません。

Watashi wa sono an ni wa v. sansee-suru [to shite mo], okane wa ima wa dase-masen.

Even if I were to agree to that proposal, I cannot give you any money now.

B) 車(くるま)を買(か)い替(か)える[としても]、今度(こんど)もやっぱり白(しろ)いのにしましょうね。

Kuruma o v. kai-kaeru [to shite mo], kondo mo yappari shiroi no ni shi-mashoo ne.

Even if we were to buy a new car, we would stick with white, right?

TO-SHITE-WA　と-して-は　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "wa は," and "shite して," from the verb "suru する (to do)." Indicates a position or a circumstance.

English approximation: "as for"

A) 彼女(かのじょ)[としては]、彼(かれ)のプロポーズを断(ことわ)るほかなかったのだろう。

n. Kanojo [to shite wa], kare no puropoozu o kotowaru hoka nakatta no daroo.

As for her, there was probably no other choice but to say no to his marriage proposal.

B) わたし[としては]、彼(かれ)の意見(いけん)に反対(はんたい)です。

n. Watashi [to shite wa], kare no iken ni hantai desu.

As for me, I don't agree with his opinion.

TO-WA と-は Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "wa は."

1. As a quotation, introduces the topic.

English approximation: "the (thing) that is called ..."

A) ブラックホール[とは]、一体(いったい)どんなものなのだろう。

n. Burakku-hooru [to wa], ittai don-na mono na no daroo.

What exactly is the thing that is called a black hole?

B) 政治(せいじ)[とは]、政治家(せいじか)にだけ任(まか)せておいてよいものであろうか。

n. Seeji [to wa], seeji-ka ni dake makasete-oite yoi mono de aroo ka.

That which is called "government," is it something that we should leave only in the hands of politicians?

2. As an emphatic version of "to と," meaning "together with."

English approximation: "with"

A) わたし、高見君[とは]もう付き合うのやめたわ。

Watashi, n. takami-kun [to wa] moo tsuki-au no yameta wa.

I've decided to stop being friends with Takami.

B) 小川さん[とは]、小学校のときからのお友達ですの。

n. Ogawa-san [to wa], shoogakoo no toki kara no otomodachi desu no.

I've been friends with Ogawa since grade school.

3. Placed at the end of a sentence as an exclamatory particle, expresses surprise, anger or some sort of emotion.

English approximation: "to think that ..."

A) 竹内君、あんなに一生懸命勉強したのに不合格だった[とは]。

Takeuchi-kun, an-na ni isshoo-kenmee benkyoo-shita no ni fu-gookaku c. datta [to wa].

Takeuchi studied so hard and to think that he didn't pass!

B) もう今年も十二月[とは]。月日のたつのは何と早いのだろう。

Moo kotoshi mo n. juuni-gatsu [to wa]. Tsukihi no tatsu no wa nan to hayai no daroo.

To think that it's already December! How quickly the days and months pass.

TO-WA-IE　と-は-いえ　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "wa は," and "ie いえ," from the verb "yuu いう (to say)." Used as an adversative conjunction. Interchangeable with "to wa ii-nagara とはいいながら" or "to wa yuu mono no

とはいうものの."

English approximation: "even though"

A) 梅雨(つゆ)[とはいえ]、今年(ことし)は晴(は)れた日(ひ)が多(おお)い。

n: Tsuyu [to wa ie], kotoshi wa hareta hi ga ooi.

Even though it's the rainy season, there have been many clear days this year.

B) このまつたけはおいしい[とはいいながら]、ずいぶん値段(ねだん)が高(たか)いね。

Kono matsutake wa adj. oishii [to wa ii nagara], zuibun nedan ga takai ne.

Even though this matsutake mushroom is good, it's really expensive, isn't it?

TO-YUU と-いう Combination particle

A combination of the particle "to と" and the verb "yuu いう (to say, called/named)."

1. Introduces a proper noun.

English approximation: "... called/named ..."

A) 富士山(ふじさん)[という]山(やま)は、日本(にほん)で一番高(いちばんたか)い山(やま)です。

n. Fujisan [to yuu] yama wa, nihon de ichiban takai yama desu.

The mountain called Fuji-san is the tallest mountain in Japan.

B) ナンシー[という]女性(じょせい)はどの人(ひと)ですか。

n. Nanshii [to yuu] josee wa dono hito desu ka?

Which person is the woman named Nancy?

2. After a number, indicates that the quantity of something has reached

that number.

English approximation: "numbering" "totaling"

A) プロ野球の開幕試合に、五万人[という]人がスタジアムに押しかけた。

Puro-yakyuu no kaimaku-jiai ni, n. go-man nin [to yuu] hito ga sutajiamu ni oshikaketa.

For the opening game of baseball, people numbering fifty thousand rushed to the stadium.

B) 何千枚[という]宝くじが、一日で売り切れた。

n. Nan-zen mai [to yuu] takara-kuji ga, ichi-nichi de uri-kireta.

Lottery tickets totaling several thousand were sold out overnight.

3. Placed after a phrase or a sentence, sets as a quotation and modifies the noun that immediately follows it.

English approximation: "(something) that ..."

A) 林さんの息子さんがバスケットボールの選手だ[という]ことを聞きました。

cl. Hayashi-san no musuko-san ga basuketto-booru no senshu da [to yuu] koto o kiki-mashita.

I heard (the story) that Hayashi's son was a basketball player.

B) お化けがでる[という]話は信じられません。

cl. Obake ga deru [to yuu] hanashi wa shinjirare-masen.

I cannot believe a story that claims that there are ghosts.

4. Placed at the end of a sentence, follows a statement as a quotation.

English approximation: "I hear" "they say" "it's said"

A) 彼の祖父は大学者だった[という]。

cl. Kare no sofu wa dai-gakusha datta [to yuu].

They say that his grandfather was a great scholar.

B) 昔(むかし)この町(まち)は山(やま)だった[という]。

cl. Mukashi kono machi wa yama datta [to yuu].

It is said that this town used to be a mountain a long time ago.

5. Used between two repeated nouns, signifies every single one in that category.

English approximation: "every single ..."

A) 濃(こ)い霧(きり)のため、車(くるま)[という]車(くるま)はみんなライトをつけて走(はし)っている。

Koi kiri no tame, n. kuruma [to yuu] kuruma wa min-na raito o tsukete hashitte-iru.

Due to the dense fog, every single car is running with its headlights on.

B) お祭(まつ)りで、村中(むらじゅう)の男(おとこ)[という]男(おとこ)がおみこしを担(かつ)いでいる。

Omatsuri de, mura-juu no n. otoko [to yuu] otoko ga omikoshi o katsuide-iru.

Since it is festival time, every single man in the village is helping to carry the portable shrine.

TO-YUU-KOTO-WA と-いう-こと-は Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and "wa は," the verb "yuu いう (to say)" and the noun "koto こと (fact/matter)." Used in drawing a conclusion from the action/situation described in the previous sentence.

English approximation: "that means ..."

A) 彼からまだ電話がかかってこない。[ということは]、まだ出張から帰ってないのだろう。

Kare kara mada denwa ga kakatte-ko-nai. [To yuu koto wa], mada shucchoo kara kaette-nai no daroo.

He hasn't called me yet. That means he probably hasn't come home from his business trip yet.

TO-YUU-NO-WA(MO) と-いう-の-は(も) Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と," "no の," and "wa(mo) は(も)," and the verb "yuu いう(to say)." Explains a reason or a cause for an action or situation.

English approximation: "the reason (for that) ..."

A) 彼は他人を信じない。[というのは]、友達にだまされたことがあるからです。

Kare wa hito o shinji-nai. [To yuu no wa], tomodachi ni damasareta koto ga aru kara desu.

He doesn't trust other people. The reason (for that) is that he has been deceived by a friend in the past.

B) 彼は最近会社をやめました。[というのも]、新しい事業を始めたからです。

Kare wa saikin kaisha o yame-mashita. [To yuu no mo], atarashii jigyoo o hajimeta kara desu.

He recently quit his job. The reason (for that) was that he started a new business.

TO-YUU-TO　と-いう-と　Combination particle

A combination of the particles "to と" and the verb "yuu いう (to say)."

1. As a conjunction, shows that whenever something occurs, something else also always happens.

English approximation: "every" "every time"

A) この大学(だいがく)では、前日(ぜんじつ)まで雨(あめ)でも、卒業式(そつぎょうしき)[というと]必(かなら)ず晴(は)れるのだよ。

Kono daigaku de wa, zenjitsu made ame demo, n. sotsugyoo-shiki [to yuu to] kanarazu hareru no da yo.

At this university, even if it were to rain until the day before, it always clears up on graduation day.

2. At the beginning of the sentence, in drawing what seems like the natural conclusion judging from the preceding statement.

English approximation: "if (we) say that, then ..."

A) 学生(がくせい)は遊(あそ)ぶところをたくさん知(し)ってるからね。[というと]、学生(がくせい)はあまり勉強(べんきょう)していないように聞(き)こえるけど。

Gakusee wa asobu tokoro o takusan shitte-ru kara ne. [To yuu to], gakusee wa amari benkyoo-shite-inai yoo ni kikoe-ru kedo.

Students know of lots of places to have fun, you know. If we say that, then, it sounds like they're not studying very much, but ...

TTE って

Used in casual speech.

1. Introduces a quotation, similar to "to と."

English approximation: "... say (that)"

A) お父さんがね、わたしの作ったお料理とってもおいしかった**って**。

Otoosan ga ne, cl. watashi no tsukutta oryoori tottemo oishi-katta **tte**.

Dad said that the dishes I cooked were really good.

B) 彼ね、今晩来てくれないか**って**言うのよ。

Kare ne, cl. konban kite kurenai ka **tte** yuu no yo.

He asked me if I could come over tonight. (literally: He said to me, could you come over tonight.)

2. An informal variant of "to yuu という," modifies the noun that directly follows this particle.

English approximation: "the (noun) called ..."

A) 相撲**って**スホーツは、なかなか面白いね。

n. Sumoo **tte** supootsu wa, naka-naka omoshiroi ne.

The sport called sumo is pretty interesting, isn't it?

B) ニューヨーク**って**街は、汚いけど活気があるね。

n. Nyuuyooku **tte** machi wa, kitanai kedo kakki ga aru ne.

The city called New York is dirty but full of life, isn't it?

3. Introduces the topic casually.

English approximation: "(speaking of)"

A) オオカミ**って**恐いんだね、犬によく似てるけど。

n. Ookami [tte] kowai-n da ne, inu ni yoku niteru kedo.

Wolves are vicious, even though they look a lot like dogs.

B) あした大阪へ行く[って]本当？

cl. Ashita oosaka e iku [tte] hontoo?

Is it true you're going to Osaka tomorrow? (literally: That you are going to Osaka tomorrow, is it true?)

4. In an interrogative sentence.

1) Repeats that which was said by the other party.

English approximation: "(You) are asking/saying ...?"

A) いつ温泉に行こうか[って]？　忙しいから当分駄目だね。

cl. Itsu onsen ni ikoo ka [tte]? Isogashii kara toobun dame da ne.

You're asking when we should go to a hot spring? Not for a while because I'm busy.

B) もう出かけよう[って]？　君早いね、支度するの。

cl. Moo dekake yoo [tte]? Kimi hayai ne, shitaku-suru no.

You're saying let's go already? You're quick at getting ready, aren't you?

1) Expresses a desire to confirm what was said by the other party.

English approximation: "Is it true that ...?"

A) 彼女を見かけた[って]？　いつ、どこで？

cl. Kanojo o mikaketa [tte]? Itsu, doko de?

Is it true that you saw her? When and where?

B) 医学部に合格なさったんです[って]？　おめでとうございます。

cl. Igakubu ni gookaku nasatta-n desu [tte]? Omedetoo

gozaimasu.

Is it true that you got into medical school? Congratulations!

5. In talking about hearsay.

English approximation: "(they) say" "I hear"

A) 渡辺(わたなべ)さんちね、大(おお)きなカラーテレビ買(か)ったんだ[って]。

Watanabe-san chi ne, cl. ookina karaaterebi katta-n da [tte].

I hear that the Watanabes bought a big color TV.

B) 課長(かちょう)の話(はなし)ては、今度(こんど)のボーナスいつもより少(すく)ないんだ[って]。

Kachoo no hanashi de wa, cl. kondo no boonasu itsumo yori sukunai-n da [tte].

According to what the section chief said, our bonuses this time will be less than usual.

6. In the pattern "datte だって."

English approximation: "(he/she) says ..."

A) お兄(にい)ちゃんあしたテストがあるから、僕(ぼく)と遊(あそ)ぶ時間(じかん)ないんた[って]

cl. Oniichan ashita tesuto ga aru kara, boku to asobu jikan nai-n da [tte].

My elder brother said that he has a test tomorrow, so he has no time to play with me.

B) コンクールね、早川(はやかわ)さんが一等(いっとう)だ[って]さ。

cl. Konkuuru ne, hayakawa-san ga it-too da [tte] sa.

They said that Hayakawa has placed first in the competition.

7. The casual version of "tote とて"; poses a hypothetical situation.

English approximation: "even if (I) were to ..."

A) 一生懸命勉強(いっしょうけんめいべんきょう)した[って]、飯田君(いいだくん)にはかなわない

Isshoo-kenmee $_{v.}$ benkyoo-shita [tte], iida-kun ni wa kanawa-nai.

Even if I were to study very hard, I couldn't compete with Iida.

B) いまさら嘆(なげ)いた[って]はじまらない。

Imasara $_{v.}$ nageita [tte] hajimara-nai.

It wouldn't do any good to grieve now. (literally: Even if I were to grieve now, it wouldn't do any good.)

WA は

FUNDAMENTALS OF "WA は"

First, note that the particle "は" is read "wa," even though it is normally read "ha." Also, when reading a romanized sentence, you should note that "wa" has two hiragana possibilities: は, which is the particle to be discussed here, and the particle わ. Generally speaking, you can apply the following rule in deciding between the two choices:

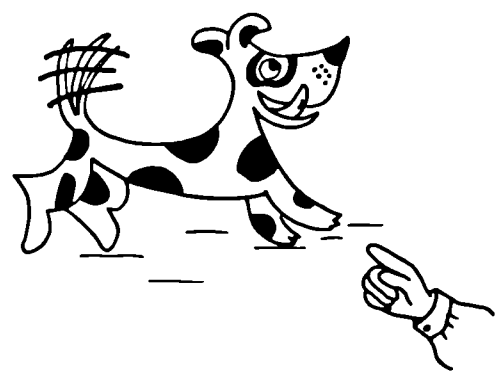
(a) If "wa" appears in the middle of a sentence after the subject (a noun or a nominal), then it is the particle は.

(b) If "wa" appears at the end of a sentence or clause following a copula, verb, or adjective, the particle is わ.

For example: あれ[は]犬(いぬ)です[わ]。

Are [wa] inu desu [wa].

That is a dog.



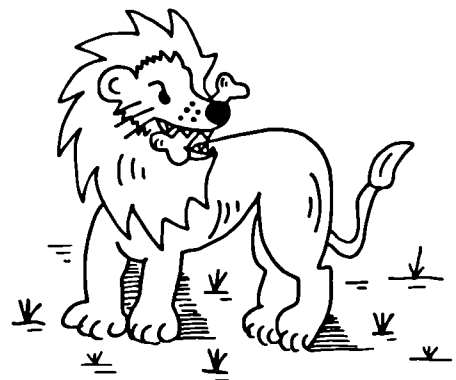
1. "Wa は" as a topic marker in an affirmative sentence.

"wa は" marks the topic or the subject by directly following it. The structure that is established, then, is a topic followed by a comment on that topic, where "wa は" functions like "as for ...," or "in referring to ...." Note that the particle "ga が" also serves as a topic/subject marker, but is used differently (see p. 34).

A) ライオン[は]猛獣(もうじゅう)だ。

n. Raion [wa] moojuu da.

As for lions, (they) are ferocious animals.



B) この本(ほん)[は]難(むずか)しい。

Kono n. hon [wa] muzukashii.

As for this book, (it) is difficult.

C) あの人[は]、山田(やまだ)さんのご主人(しゅじん)です。

Ano n. hito [wa], yamada-san no goshujin desu.

As for that person, (he) is Mrs. Yamada's husband.

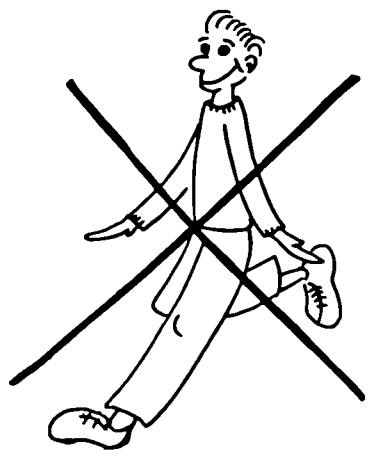
2. "Wa は" as a topic marker in a negative sentence.

In a negative sentence, "wa は" usually indicates a comparison, emphasis, or choice.

A) わたし[は]行(い)きません。

n. Watashi [wa] iki-masen.

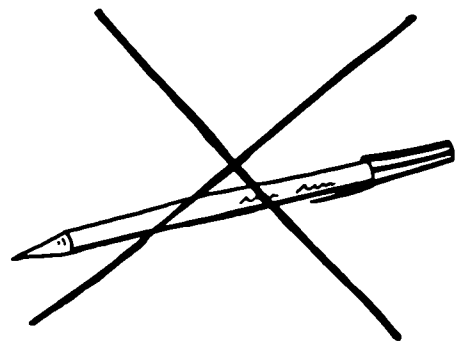
As for me, I won't go./I'm not going to go. (i.e. I will not go, but someone else probably will.)



B) ボールペン は ありません。

n. Boorupen wa ari-masen.

There is no ball-point pen. (i.e. There is no ball-point pen, but there are other writing instruments.)



* Note that when the subject is an interrogative pronoun, "ga が" is used instead of "wa は" (see p. 34).

3. As an emphatic particle.

1) When the topic is the object of a verb, it is followed by "wa は," which emphasizes it.

A) お金(かね) は 僕(ぼく)が払(はら)うよ。

n. Okane wa boku ga harau yo.

As for the money, I'll pay (it). (i.e. but I may not be responsible for other things.)

B) 宿題(しゅくだい) は もう済(す)んだ。

n. Shukudai wa moo sun-da.

As for homework, (I) have already finished (it). (i.e. but I

haven't finished doing other things.)

2) Follows a particle or an adverb.

A) いつも[は]バスで行(い)きます。

adv. Itsumo [wa] basu de iki-masu.

Usually, (I) go by bus.

B) あの人(ひと)と[は]もう付(つ)き合(あ)いません。

Ano hito p. to [wa] moo tsuki-ai-masen.

I'm not going to associate with that person anymore. (literally: As for (relations) with that person, I'm not going to associate (with him/her) anymore.)

3) Following a verb, adjective, or the particles "te て" or "de で."

A) もう二度(にど)と頼(たの)み[は]しないからさ。

Moo nido to v. tanomi [wa] shi-nai kara sa.

Look, I won't ever ask you (for this favor) again, so ...

B) 薬(くすり)は、まだ飲(の)んで[は]いないよ。

Kusuri wa, mada non p. de [wa] i-nai yo.

As for the medication, I haven't taken it yet.

C) そのうわさ、うそで[は]ないのよ。

Sono uwasa, uso p. de [wa] nai no yo.

That rumor isn't a lie, you know.

4. Indicates a contrast between two topics.

A) 昼(ひる)[は]暑(あつ)く、夜(よる)[は]寒(さむ)い。それが砂漠(さばく)の気候(きこう)だ。

n. Hiru [wa] atsuku, n. yoru [wa] samui. Sore ga sabaku no kikoo da.

Days are hot, and nights are cold. That is the climate of the desert.

B) これ[は]わたしの、それ[は]あなたの。間違えないで。

n. Kore [wa] watashi no, n. sore [wa] anata no. Machigae-nai de.

This is mine, that is yours. Don't get them mixed up.

5. In the pattern "... (de)wa ... (da)ga ～(で)は～(だ)が," indicates that the speaker is recognizing another view or giving way to something.

English approximation: "..., (to be sure) ..."

A) 電話をかけるに[は]かけたが、手紙も出しておこう。

Denwa o kakeru p. ni [wa] kaketa ga, tegami mo dashite okoo.

I did telephone (to be sure), but I'll also send a letter.

B) この本、読むに[は]読んだが、難しくてあまりよくわからない。

Kono hon, yomu p. ni [wa] yonda ga, muzukashiku te amari yoku wakara-nai.

I've read through this book (to be sure), but it's so difficult that I couldn't understand it well.

WA わ

1. Found in women's language.

1) Placed at the end of a sentence, serves to soften the statement. Not translatable.

A) あら、変だ[わ]。車の鍵、確かにここに置いておいたんだけど。

Ara, hen c. da [wa]. Kuruma no kagi, tashika ni koko ni oite-oita-n da kedo.

Hmm, this is strange. I'm certain I put the car keys here, but ...

B) あら、すてきた[わ]ね、あなたのドレス。

Ara, suteki $_{c.}$da [wa] ne, anata no doresu.

Wow, your dress is so nice.

C) そうね、いますぐ彼(かれ)に電話(でんわ)したほうがいいと思(おも)う[わ]。

Soo ne, ima sugu kare ni denwa-shita hoo ga ii to $_{v.}$omou [wa].

Well, yes, I think it would be better to call him right now.

2) Expresses a casual exclamation. Not translatable.

A) 上手(じょうず)だ[わ]、この絵(え)。幸子(さちこ)さんがかいたんですって。

Joozu $_{c.}$da [wa], kono e. Sachiko-san ga kaita-n desut te.

This drawing is done well! Sachiko drew it, I hear.

B) 驚(おどろ)いた[わ]、恐竜(きょうりゅう)ってあんなに大(おお)きいとは思(おも)わなかったもの。

$_{v.}$Odoroita [wa], kyooryuu tte an-na ni ookii to wa omowa-nakatta mono.

I'm surprised! I hadn't thought that dinosaurs were that big.

2. In making a list in an exclamatory tone. Not translatable.

A) 熱(ねつ)はでる[わ]、のどは痛(いた)い[わ]、今度(こんど)の風邪(かぜ)はひどかった。

Netsu wa $_{v.}$deru [wa], nodo wa $_{adj.}$itai [wa], kondo no kaze wa hidokatta.

I had a fever, and a sore throat; this cold was pretty severe.

B) アリの巣(す)をつついたら、出(で)る[わ]出(で)る[わ]、何百(なんびゃく)というアリがはい出(だ)してきた。

Ari no su o tsutsuitara, $_{v.}$deru [wa] $_{v.}$deru [wa], nan-byaku to yuu ari ga hai-dashite kita.

When I poked at the anthill, several hundreds of ants came flooding out (they just kept coming out (literally: came out and came out)).

YA や

FUNDAMENTALS OF "YA や"

The basic function of the particle "ya や" is similar to that of the particle "toと" (see P. 200). It lists nouns, phrases and clauses like the word "and" in English. However, whereas "to と" refers to specific, clearly defined things, "ya や" refers more to a category, and makes the thing more vague. Compare:

a) ピクニックにはお菓子(かし)[と]飲(の)み物(もの)を持(も)って行(い)きましょう。

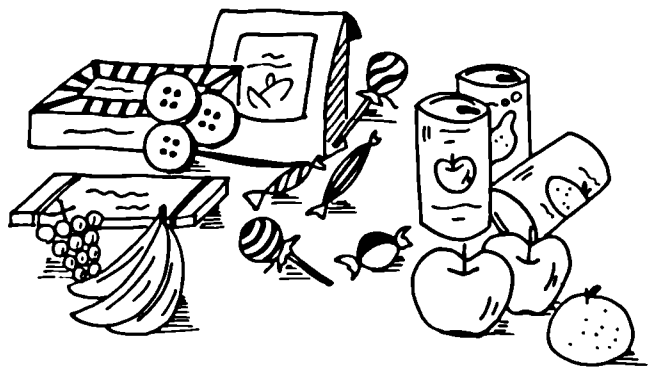
Pikunikku ni wa n. okashi [to] n. nomimono o motte iki-mashoo.

Let's bring some candies [and] drinks on the picnic.

ピクニックにはお菓子(かし)[や]飲(の)み物(もの)を持(も)って行(い)きましょう。

Pikunikku ni wa n. okashi [ya] n. nomimono o motte iki-mashoo.

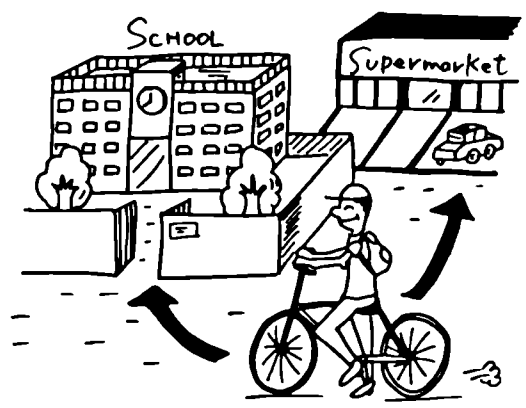
Let's bring [something like] candies and drinks on the picnic.



b) 学校(がっこう)へ行(い)くとき[と]買(か)い物(もの)に行(い)くときは自転車(じてんしゃ)で行(い)きます。

n. Gakkoo e iku toki (clause) [to] n. kaimono ni iku toki (clause) wa jitensha de iki-masu.

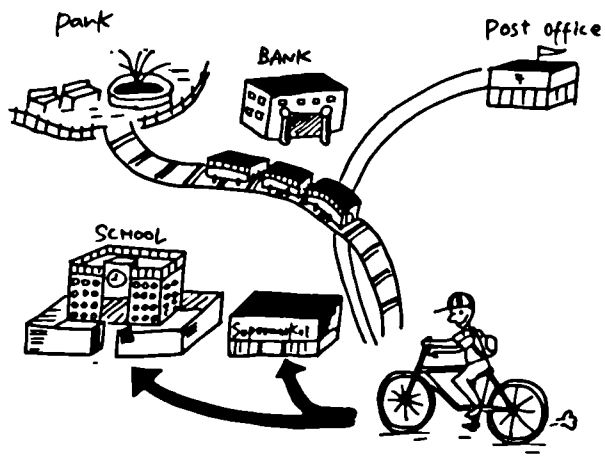
I ride my bicycle (only when I) go to school [and] go shopping.



学校(がっこう)へ行(い)くとき[や]買(か)い物(もの)に行(い)くときは自転車(じてんしゃ)で行(い)きます。

n. Gakkoo e iku toki (clause) [ya] n. kaimono ni iku (clause) toki wa jitensha de iki-masu.

I ride my bicycle to go to school and to go shopping, (and to go [to other places]).



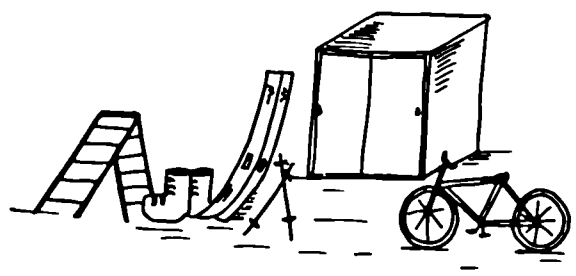
1. Placed after a noun, loosely refers to it and other things that are also present or similar.

English approximation: "... and ... (among other things/places)"

A) 物置(ものおき)に自転車(じてんしゃ)[や]スキーがしまってあります。

Mono-oki ni n. jitensha ya sukii ga shimatte ari-masu.

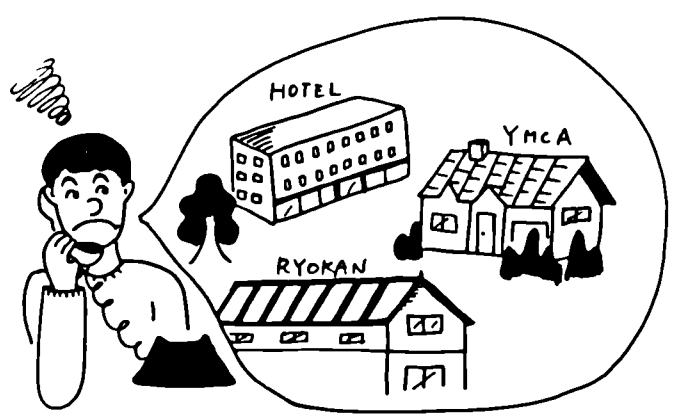
In the storage room, there is a bicycle and a pair of skis (among other things).



B) 夏休(なつやす)みで、ホテル や 旅館(りょかん)はどこも満員(まんいん)だ。

Natsu-yasumi de, n. hoteru ya ryokan wa doko mo man-in da.

Since it is summer vacation, hotels, inns and the like are fully booked.



C) 今日(きょう)は貴君(たかしくん)の誕生(たんじょう)パーティーだったの。守君(まもるくん) や 朝子(あさこ)ちゃん や 智(とも)ちゃん や 誠君(まことくん)、仲良(なかよ)しがみんな集(あつ)まったのよ。

Kyoo wa takashi-kun no tanjoo paatii datta no. n. Mamoru-kun ya n. asako-chan ya n. tomo-chan ya makoto-kun, nakayoshi ga min-na atsumatta no yo.

Takashi had a birthday party today. All his good friends like Mamoru, Asako, Tomo, Makoto, among others, got together.

2. Indicates that an action is immediately followed by another action. Shortened version of "... ya ina ya ～やいなや" (see p. 247).

English approximation: "as soon as" "when" "the moment ..."

A) 彼女(かのじょ)は、僕(ぼく)の姿(すがた)を見(み)る や、怒(いか)りを爆発(ばくはつ)させた。

Kanojo wa, boku no sugata o v. miru ya, ikari o bakuhatsu saseta.

As soon as she saw me, she went into a fit of anger.

B) 地震(じしん)が発生(はっせい)する や、気象庁(きしょうちょう)は直(ただ)ちに津波警報(つなみけいほう)を出(だ)した。

Jishin ga v. hassee-suru ya, kishoo-choo wa tadachi ni tsunami-keehoo o dashita.

As soon as the earthquake happened, the Meteorological Agency issued a tidal wave warning.

3. Placed at the end of a sentence in men's language.

1) Used in casually coaxing or inviting action.

English approximation: "shall we?" "would we?"

A) まあ、もう少(すこ)し話(はなし)をしてから帰(かえ)ろう や。

Maa, moo sukoshi hanashi o shite kara v. kaeroo ya.

Well now, let's talk a little more before we go home, shall we?

B) 久(ひさ)しぶりに、うなぎでも食(た)べに行(い)こう や。

Hisashiburi ni, unagi demo tabe ni v. ikoo ya.

It's been a long time (since we had some), so let's go and have unagi or something, shall we?

C) もうやめよう や、ソフトボール。そろそろ暗(くら)くなってきたよ。

cl. Moo yame-yoo ya, sofutobooru. Soro-soro kuraku-natte kita yo.

Let's stop playing softball, shall we? It's getting dark.

2) Expresses a sense of resignation, helplessness or some sort of emotion. Not translatable.

A) 文子(ふみこ)さん、僕(ぼく)の気持(きも)ちわかってくれないんだ。まあ仕方(しかた)がない や。

そのうちわかってくれるさ。

Fumiko-san, boku no kimochi wakatte-kure-nai-n da. Maa cl. shikata-ga-nai [ya]. Sono uchi wakatte-kureru sa.

Fumiko won't try to understand how I feel. Well, there is nothing I can do. I hope she'll understand me some day.

B) まあ、いい[や]。もう一度(いちど)やり直(なお)そう。

Maa, adj. ii [ya]. Moo ichido yari-naosoo.

Forget it. I'll do it over again.

C) 園田君(そのだくん)、ガールフレンドが出来(でき)たんだって。うらやましい[や]。

Sonoda-kun, gaaru-furendo ga dekita-n datte. adj. Urayamashii [ya].

I hear that Sonoda has a girlfriend now. I'm envious.

D) あ、ボールが当(あ)たって窓(まど)ガラスが割(わ)れちゃった。どうにもならない[や]。みんなで謝(あやま)りにいこうよ。

A, booru ga atatte mado-garasu ga warechatta. cl. Doo ni mo nara-nai [ya]. Min-na de ayamari ni ikoo yo.

Oh no, the ball broke the window! We can't do anything about it. Let's all go and apologize.

4. After the name of the party addressed, softens the tone of the entire sentence. Mainly used by elderly people. Not translatable.

A) 芳子(よしこ)[や]、ちょっと針(はり)に糸(いと)を通(とお)しておくれでないかい？

n. Yoshiko [ya], chotto hari ni ito o tooshite okure-de-nai ka i?

Yoshiko, my dear, will you thread the needle for me?

B) おじいさん[や]、今日(きょう)はあなたの誕生日(たんじょうび)ですよ。

n. Ojiisan [ya], kyoo wa anata no tanjoobi desu yo.

My dear old man, today is your birthday, you know.

5. In set phrases such as "mata mo ya またもや" and "mashite ya ましてや," intensifies the meanings of "mata mo またも" (again) and "mashite まして" (even more). Not translatable.

A) 僕は、またも[や]彼女を怒らせてしまった。

Boku wa, ph.mata mo [ya] kanojo o okorasete shimatta.

I ended up making her angry yet again.

B) このドレス、去年でさえ窮屈だったのよ。まして[や]、今年はまた太ったもの、入るはすがないわ。

Kono doresu, kyonen de sae kyuukutsu datta no yo. adv.Mashite [ya], kotoshi wa mata futotta mono, hairu hazu-ga-nai wa.

This dress was too tight for me last year even. So it's even more true that I can't fit into it, because I put on extra weight this year.

YAI やい

1. Used in calling out to someone, with a tone of familiarity or scorn. Not translatable.

A) 秋雄君[やい]、ちょっとおじさんに手を貸してくれ。

n.Akio-kun [yai], chotto ojisan ni te o kashite kure.

Akio, come lend me (your uncle) a hand for a bit.

B) 毛虫が恐いの？　いくじなし[やい]。

Kemushi ga kowai no? n.Ikujinashi [yai].

You're scared of caterpillars? You coward!

2. At the end of a sentence, creates an exclamatory, curt statement. Not translatable.

A) その鉢(はち)こわしたの僕(ぼく)じゃない [やい]。

Sono hachi kowashita no cl. boku ja nai [yai].

I'm not the one who broke that flower pot!

B) もう君(きみ)になんか頼(たの)まない [やい]。

Moo kimi ni nanka v. tanoma-nai [yai].

I'll never ask you for a favor again!

YA-INA-YA　や-いな-や　Combination particle

A combination of the particle "ya や," the adverb "ina いな(not)" and the particle "ya や." Indicates that an action is immediately followed by another action.

English approximation: "as soon as ..."

A) 主人(しゅじん)は出張(しゅっちょう)から帰(かえ)る [やいなや]、風邪(かぜ)で寝込(ねこ)んでしまった。

Shujin wa shucchoo kara v. kaeru [ya ina ya], kaze de nekonde shimatta.

My husband, as soon as he came back from his business trip, took to bed with a cold.

B) 若者(わかもの)は馬(うま)にまたがる [やいなや]、駆(か)け去(さ)った。

Wakamono wa uma ni v. matagaru [ya ina ya], kake-satta.

The young man, as soon as he got on the horse, galloped away.

YARA やら

1. Following an interrogative or a word indicating uncertainty, emphasizes the uncertainty. Not translatable.

A) 僕のおじいさんは歯がたくさん欠けているので、何を言っている(の) [やら] さっぱりわからない。

Boku no ojiisan wa ha ga takusan kakete-iru no de, nani o v. itte-iru (no) [yara] sappari wakara-nai.

Since my grandfather is missing lots of teeth, (I) can't understand what he's saying at all.

B) ひいおばあさんが亡くなったのは、いつのことだった [やら] 忘れてしまったよ。

Hii-obaasan ga nakunatta no wa, itsu no koto c. datta [yara] wasurete shimatta yo.

I've completely forgotten when it was that my great-grandmother passed away.

2. In the pattern "to yara とやら," to make a statement more vague.

English approximation: "... or something/someone"

A) 高見と [やら] いう人がお目にかかりたいそうです。

Takami p. to [yara] yuu hito ga ome-ni-kakari-tai soo desu.

Someone named Takami or something says he would like to see you.

B) 坂本さんは、どこと [やら] わたしの姉に似ている。

Sakamoto-san wa, doko p. to [yara] watashi no ane ni nite-iru.

Ms. Sakamoto somehow resembles my elder sister.

3. In the pattern "... yara ... yara ～やら～やら," followed by a negation, indicates an indecision between the choices.

English approximation: "... or ..."

A) 息子も大きくなって、どっちが主人のシャツ[やら]息子のシャツ[やら]、見分けがつかない。

Musuko mo ookiku natte, docchi ga shujin no $_{n.}$ shatsu [yara] musuko no $_{n.}$ shatsu [yara], miwake ga tsuka-nai.

My son has grown up, and I can't tell which are my husband's shirts and which are my son's.

B) 今日は雨が降るの[やら]降らないの[やら]。まあ傘だけは持っていこう。

Kyoo wa ame ga furu $_{p.}$ no [yara] fura-nai $_{p.}$ no [yara]. Maa kasa dake wa motte ikoo.

(I wonder) if it will rain today or not. I'll bring an umbrella (just in case).

4. Lists two or more items, with the implication that other items exist as well.

English approximation: "and ... (other things)"

A) あしたはクリスマス、おいしいごちそう[やら]ケーキ[やら]たくさん作りましょうね。

Ashita wa kurisumasu, oishii $_{n.}$ gochisoo [yara] $_{n.}$ keeki [yara] takusan tsukuri-mashoo ne.

Tomorrow is Christmas Day, let's make lots of good food and cakes (and other things).

B) 上の階でまた夫婦けんかが始まったよ。ものを投げる [やら] わめく [やら]、大変だなあ

Ue no kai de mata fuufu-genka ga hajimatta yo. Mono o v. nageru [yara] v. wameku [yara], taihen da naa.

The couple upstairs has started fighting again. They're throwing things and screaming (at each other) (and doing other things), it's quite something.

5. Placed at the end of a sentence, expresses a casual remark addressed to oneself with a tone of uncertainty.

English approximation: "I wonder ..."

A) 今日も主人は魚釣りに出かけた。何匹釣ってくる(の) [やら]。

Kyoo mo shujin wa sakana-tsuri ni dekaketa. Nan-biki v. tsutte-kuru (no) [yara].

My husband went fishing again today. I wonder how many he'll catch and bring back?

B) 約束の時間を一時間十五分も過きたのに、彼女はまだ来ない。どれだけ待たされる(の) [やら]

Yakusoku no jikan o ichi-jikan juugo-fun mo sugita no ni, kanojo wa mada ko-nai. Doredake v. mata-sareru (no) [yara].

Even though it's an hour and fifteen minutes past the time we're supposed to meet, she hasn't come yet. I wonder how long I'll be kept waiting?

YO よ

1. Placed at the end of a sentence.

1) Transforms the sentence into an exclamation. Not translatable.

A) 彼女(かのじょ)の花嫁姿(はなよめすがた)、本当(ほんとう)にきれいだった[よ]。

Kanojo no hanayome-sugata, hontoo ni kiree $_{c.}$ datta [yo].

She looked really beautiful in her wedding dress!

B) あなたの演奏(えんそう)素敵(すてき)だったわ[よ]。

Anata no ensoo suteki datta $_{p.}$ wa [yo].

Your performance was really splendid.

2) After an interrogative pronoun, adds a tone of criticism. Not translatable.

A) その格好(かっこう)は何(なん)だ[よ]。ズボンからシャツがはみ出(だ)しているじゃないか。

Sono kakkoo wa $_{ph.}$ nan da [yo]. Zubon kara shatsu ga hami dashite-iru ja nai ka.

What's with your attire? Your shirt's hanging out of your pants.

B) 急(きゅう)に泣(な)き出(だ)したりして、一体(いったい)どうしたの[よ]。

Kyuu ni naki-dashitari shite, ittai $_{cl.}$ doo shita no [yo].

(You) suddenly burst into tears, what in the world is the matter?

3) Emphasizes a command. Not translatable.

A) 早(はや)く食(た)べろ[よ]。学校(がっこう)に遅(おく)れるぞ。

Hayaku $_{v.}$ tabero [yo]. Gakkoo ni okureru zo.

Eat quickly, already! You'll be late for school.

B) 黙って辞書を使ったぐらいで、そんなに怒るな[よ]。

Damatte jisho o tsukatta gurai de, son na ni okoru p. na [yo].

Don't get so angry at me just for using your dictionary without asking you!

4) After the form "oo おお (う)" or "yoo よう."

Emphasizes a statement of suggestion. Not translatable.

A) いいお天気だ。散歩にでも行こう[よ]。

Ii otenki da. Sanpo ni demo v. ikoo [yo].

It's nice out. Let's go take a walk or something.

B) ねえ、お父さん、おすし食べよう[よ]。

Nee, otoosan, osushi v. tabe yoo [yo].

Say, Dad, shall we have sushi?

Expresses an emotional state. Not translatable.

C) なんて暗い道なんでしょう[よ]。

Nan te kurai michi na-n c. deshoo [yo].

What a dark road (this) is!

D) 彼女には新しいボーイフレンドか出来たらしい。僕のことなんかすぐ忘れるだろう[よ]。

Kanojo ni wa atarashii booi-furendo ga dekita rashii. Boku no koto nan ka sugu wasureru c. daroo [yo].

I've heard that she has a new boyfriend. I'll bet she'll forget about me very soon!

2. Placed at the end of a clause or a sentence.

1) Expresses an exclamatory address. Not translatable.

A) 神[よ]、お守りください。

n. Kami [yo], omamori kudasai.

God, please protect me.

B) おーい！ 平岩君[よ]、早く登ってこいよ。すばらしい景色だぞ。

Ooi! n. Hiraiwa-kun [yo], hayaku nobotte koi yo. Subarashii keshiki da zo.

Hey! Hiraiwa, come climb up quickly! It's a great view!

2) As a "filler" particle placed at pauses in a sentence, to catch a breath or call something to the attention of the party addressed. Not translatable.

A) お父さんまだ帰ってこないの？ ひょっとするとだ[よ]、おじさんの家に寄っているのかもしれないね。

Otoosan mada kaette ko-nai no? Hyotto suru to c. da [yo], ojisan no uchi ni yotte-iru no kamo-shirenai ne.

Your father's not home yet? There's a chance that maybe he has stopped by your uncle's.

B) 万一だ[よ]、宝くじの一等が当ったらどうする？

Man-ichi c. da [yo], takara-kuji no it-too ga atattara doo suru?

Let's say that by a one-in-ten-thousand chance, you won the lottery, what would you do?

YORI より

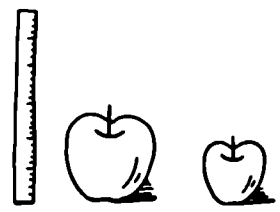
1. Makes a comparison. Also in the forms "yorika よりか," or "yorimo よりも."

English approximation: "than"

A) このりんごは、あのりんご[より]大きいです。

Kono ringo wa, ano n. ringo [yori] ookii desu.

This apple is bigger than that apple.



B) わたしは、あなた[より(か・も)]背が高い。

Watashi wa, n. anata [yori(ka/mo)] se ga takai.

I'm taller than you.

C) 今日のテストは思った[より(か・も)]難しくなかった。

Kyoo no tesuto wa v. omotta [yori(ka/mo)] muzukashiku-nakatta.

Today's exam was less difficult than I had expected.

D) きのう[より(か・も)]今日のほうがずっと寒い。

n. Kinoo [yori(ka/mo)] kyoo no hoo ga zutto samui.

Today is much colder than yesterday.

2. Establishes a boundary. Often followed by a word describing time, distance, or position.

English approximation: "than"

A) 僕たちの学校は、駅[より]手前にあります。

Boku tachi no gakkoo wa, n. eki [yori] temae ni ari-masu.

Our school is before the station. (i.e. closer to us than the station.)

B) まだおなかがすいていないなら、夕食は七時[より]後にしましょう。

Mada onaka ga suite-inai nara, yuushoku wa n. shichi-ji [yori] ato ni shi-mashoo.

If you're not hungry yet, let's have dinner after seven o'clock. (literally: later than seven.)

C) ホームの白線(はくせん)[より]内側(うちがわ)でお待(ま)ちください。

Hoomu no n. hakusen [yori] uchigawa de omachi kudasai.

Please wait inside the white line on the platform. (literally: at a more inner location than the white line.)

3. In the pattern "yori hoka よりほか," followed by a negation, shows that matters are limited to what precedes the particle and nothing else.

English approximation: "(nothing else) to do besides ..."

A) どうしても電話(でんわ)が通(つう)じない。こうなっては、中谷君(なかやくん)の家(うち)へ行(い)く[より]ほかない。

Doo shite mo denwa ga tsuuji-nai. Koo natte wa, nakaya-kun no uchi e v. iku [yori] hoka nai.

I can't get through on the phone no matter what. This being the case, there's nothing (I) can do except go to Nakaya's house.

B) ケーブルカーが故障(こしょう)で動(うご)かない。直(なお)るまで待(ま)つ[より]ほかないね。

Keeburukaa ga koshoo de ugoka-nai. Naoru made v. matsu [yori] hoka nai ne.

The tramway is out of order and not running. There's nothing to do but wait.

4. In formal or written language, indicates the starting point of time or space for an action. In colloquial usage, "kara から" is usually used in its place.

English approximation: "from"

A) 新幹線(しんかんせん)ひかり一号博多行(いちごうはかたゆ)きは、十六番線(じゅうろくばんせん)[より]発車(はっしゃ)します。

Shin-kansen hikari-ichi-goo hakata-yuki wa, n. juuroku-ban-sen [yori] hassha-shi-masu.

Shin-kansen Hikari No. 1 to Hakata will be leaving from track No. 16.

B) 今日(きょう)の会議(かいぎ)は一時(いちじ)[より]始(はじ)まります。

Kyoo no kaigi wa n. ichi-ji [yori] hajimari-masu.

Today's meeting will start from one o'clock.

5. Used with an interrogative noun such as "doko どこ (where)," "dare だれ (who)," "nani 何 (what)," etc., to indicate that which follows it is the best.

English approximation: "no better than"

A) どこ[より]我(わ)が家(や)が一番(いちばん)だね。

n. Doko [yori] wagaya ga ichi-ban da ne.

There is no better place than our home.

B) まあ、とりたてのナシ、何(なに)[より]のものをありがとうございます。

Maa, toritate no nashi, n. nani [yori] no mono o arigatoo gozaimasu.

My goodness, (these are) freshly picked pears; thank you so much (for giving us something that cannot be surpassed.)

C) 君(きみ)はだれ[より](も)早(はや)く走(はし)ったね。

Kimi wa n. dare [yori] (mo) hayaku hashitta ne.

You ran faster than anyone else, didn't you?

6. Indicates the basis for conclusions, results, etc.

English approximation: "on the basis of" "from"

A) ピアノ・コンクールの優勝者(ゆうしょうしゃ)はあしたの最終審査(さいしゅうしんさ)の結果(けっか)に[より]決(き)

めます。

Piano konkuuru no yuushoo-sha wa ashita no saishuu-shinsa no kekka p. ni [yori] kime-masu.

The winner of the piano competition will be selected on the basis of the results of the final performance tomorrow.

B) 今回(こんかい)の人口調査(じんこうちょうさ)に[より]、日本(にほん)の人口(じんこう)は約一億二千万人(やくいちおくにせんまんにん)とわかった。

Konkai no jinkoo-choosa p. ni [yori], nihon no jinkoo wa yaku ichi-oku ni-sen-man nin to wakatta.

From this census, it's understood that the population of Japan is about one hundred twenty million.

7. In the pattern "to yuu yori というより," indicates that a person/thing seems to be or is considered to be something other than what it is.

English approximation: "more of a ... than ..."

A) 斎藤君(さいとうくん)は、ビジネスマンという[より]科学者(かがくしゃ)だ。

Saitoo-kun wa, bijinesuman ph. to yuu [yori] kagakusha da.

Saito is more of a scientist than a businessman.

B) 大(おお)きいなあ！　これは湖(みずうみ)という[より]海(うみ)だ。

Ookii naa! Kore wa mizuumi ph. to yuu [yori] umi da.

It's so big! It's more like an ocean than a lake.

ZE　ぜ

Found in men's language. Used only in casual conversation among colleagues or with those whose supposed social status is below that of the speaker.

To elicit an agreement from the party addressed. Not translatable.

A) 吉岡君(よしおかくん)が係長(かかりちょう)になるんだ。みんなでお祝(いわ)いしよう ぜ 。

Yoshioka-kun ga kakari-choo ni naru-n da. Min-na de $_{v.}$ oiwai-shiyoo ze .

Yoshioka is going to become an assistant section chief. Let's all celebrate (for him).

B) 今(いま)までは三日坊主(みっかぼうず)だった。だが、今度(こんど)はきっとタバコをやめる ぜ 。

Ima made wa mikka-boozu datta. Daga, kondo wa kitto tabako o $_{v.}$ yameru ze .

Until now, I couldn't keep a resolution past three days. However, this time, I'm really going to quit smoking.

ZO ぞ

Placed at the end of a sentence or a clause, emphatically states one's opinion or judgement. Found in men's language. Not translatable.

A) 君(きみ)より僕(ぼく)のほうが背(せ)が高(たか)い ぞ 。

Kimi yori boku no hoo ga se ga $_{adj.}$ takai zo .

I'm taller than you!

B) ほら、真一(しんいち)、投(な)げる ぞ 。

Hora, shin-ichi, $_{v.}$ nageru zo .

Look, Shin-ichi, I'm going to throw (the ball)!

ZUTSU　ずつ

Establishes equal divisions.

English approximation: "... at a time" "(quantity) each ..."

A) 歯(は)が悪(わる)いので、固(かた)いものは少(すこ)し ずつ しかかめません。

Ha ga warui node, katai mono wa n. sukoshi zutsu shika kame-masen.

Since I have bad teeth, I can only chew tough things a little at a time.

B) 漫画(まんが)の本(ほん)、一冊(いっさつ) ずつ じゃなくて、もっとたくさん貸(か)してよ。

Manga no hon, n. is-satsu zutsu ja naku te, motto takusan kashite yo.

Don't lend me comic books one at a time; let me have a lot more (at once).

C) どのクラスにも、学級委員(がっきゅういいん)が二人(ふたり) ずつ います。

Dono kurasu ni mo, gakkyuu-iin ga n. futari zutsu i-masu.

There are two class representatives for each and every class.

MASTERING PARTICLES:

EXERCISES

INTRODUCTION

This section is designed for students who are at the beginning level of Japanese language studies. Learning how and when to use particles is so essential to Japanese that it's best to master the basics at an early stage. Exposure to numerous examples and problems will familiarize you with the appropriate usages.

These exercises start out with a variety of practice sentences involving the particles "waは" and "gaが," since it's crucial to grasp the difference between these two fundamental particles. As you progress, other particles are gradually introduced into the problems, and sentence structures become increasingly more complex. Your instructor may wish to use these problems as homework. There is also an answer key in the back.

Lesson 1

Complete the sentences below, using either "は(wa)" or "が(ga)" in the parentheses.

1. リンゴ（　　）三(みっ)つあります。

   Ringo (|) mit-tsu ari-masu.

   There are three apples.

2. あれ（　　）赤(あか)いリンゴです。

   Are (|) akai ringo desu.

   That is a red apple.

3. 学生(がくせい)（　　）二人(ふたり)います。

   Gakusee (|) futari i-masu.

   There are two students.

4. あの学生(がくせい)（　　）アメリカ人(じん)です。

   Ano gakusee (|) amerika-jin desu.

   That student is an American.

5. あなた（　　）どこ（　　）痛(いた)いんですか？

   Anata (|) doko (2) itai-n desu ka?

   (As for you,) where does it hurt?

6. わたし（　　）頭(あたま)（　　）痛(いた)いんです。

   Watashi (|) atama (2) itai-n desu.

   (As for me,) my head hurts.

7. わたし（　　）頭(あたま)（　　）痛(いた)くありません。

   Watashi (|) atama (2) itaku-arimasen.

   (As for me,) my head doesn't hurt (but other parts do).

8. ほら、子供達（　　）たくさん来ましたよ。

Hora, kodomo-tachi (　|　) takusan ki-mashita yo.

Look, many children have come.

9. 子供達（　　）みんな男の子ですよ。

Kodomo-tachi (　|　) min-na otoko-no-ko desu yo.

The children are all boys.

10. 田中さん（　　）今日来ますか？

Tanaka-san (　|　) kyoo ki-masu ka?

Will Mr. Tanaka come today? (Literally: "As for Mr. Tanaka ...")

11. はい、来ますよ。あ、田中さん（　　）来ました。

Hai, ki-masu yo. A, tanaka-san (　|　) ki-mashita.

Yes, (he) will come. Ah, Mr. Tanaka has come.

12. 風（　　）強いですねえ。

Kaze (　|　) tsuyoi desu nee.

It's windy, isn't it? (Literally: "The winds are strong, aren't they?")

13. 雨（　　）降ってきましたよ。

Ame (　|　) futte-ki-mashita yo.

It has started to rain. (Literally: "The rain has started to fall.")

14. あの大きい窓（　　）きれいです。

Ano ookii mado (　|　) kiree desu.

That big window is clean. (Literally: "As for that big window ...")

15. 窓（　　）開いています。

Mado (　|　) aite-imasu.

The window is open.

16. 山（　　）見えます。

Yama (1) mie-masu.

(I) can see a mountain.

17. あなた（　）あの山（　）見えますか？

Anata (1) ano yama (2) mie-masu ka?

Can you see that mountain? (Literally: "As for you ...")

18. いいえ、山（　）見えません（　）、木（　）見えます。

lie, yama (1) mie-masen (2), ki (3) mie-masu.

No, (I) can't see a mountain, but (I) can see trees. (Literally: "As for a mountain, I can't see (it), but ...")

19. どんな木（　）見えますか？

Don-na ki (1) mie-masu ka?

What kind of trees can (you) see?

20. いろいろな木（　）見えます。

Iro-iro na ki (1) mie-masu.

(I) can see many kinds of trees.

21. きれいな花（　）たくさん咲いています。

Kiree na hana (1) takusan saite-imasu.

Beautiful flowers are blooming in abundance.

22. チューリップ（　）まだ咲いていません。

Chuurippu (1) mada saite-imasen.

Tulips have not bloomed yet (but other flowers have).

23. 桜（　）どうですか？

Sakura (1) doo desu ka?

What about cherry blossoms?

24. 桜（　）ありませんよ。

Sakura (1) ari-masen yo.

There are no cherry blossoms (but there are other flowers).

25. わたし（　）山田(やまだ)と申(もう)します。

Watashi (1) yamada to mooshi-masu.

I am (called) Yamada.

26. ああ、あなた（　）山田(やまだ)さんでいらっしゃいますか。

Aa, anata (1) yamada-san de irasshaimasu ka.

Oh, you are Mr. Yamada.

27. じゃあ、どなた（　）田中(たなか)さんですか？

Jaa, donata (1) tanaka-san desu ka?

Then, who is Mr. Tanaka?

28. 私(わたくし)（　）田中(たなか)です。

Watakushi (1) tanaka desu.

I am Tanaka.

29. わたし（　）、日本語(にほんご)（ん）少(すこ)し話(はな)せます

Watashi (1) nihongo (2) sukoshi hanase-masu.

I can speak a little bit of Japanese.

30. わたし（　）、フランス語(ご)（　）わかりますが、ドイツ語(ご)（　）わかりません。

Watashi (1) furansugo (2) wakari-masu ga, doitsugo (3) wakari-masen.

I can understand French, but not German.

Lesson 2

Complete the sentences below, using "は(wa)", "が(ga)", or "も(mo)" in the parentheses.

1. これ（　　）百円(ひゃくえん)です。

   Kore (1) hyaku en desu.

   This is one hundred yen.

2. どれ（　　）二百円(にひゃくえん)ですか？

   Dore (1) ni-hyaku en desu ka?

   Which one is two hundred yen?

3. あれ（　　）二百円(にひゃくえん)です。

   Are (1) ni-hyaku en desu.

   That is two hundred yen.

4. これ（　　）二百円(にひゃくえん)ですか？

   Kore (1) ni-hyaku en desu ka?

   Is this two hundred yen also?

5. いいえ、それ（　　）二百円(にひゃくえん)じゃありません。

   Iie, sore (1) ni-hyaku en ja ari-masen.

   No, that isn't two hundred yen.

6. あなた（　　）背(せ)（　　）高(たか)いですねえ。

   Anata (1) se (2) takai desu nee.

   You are tall, aren't you. (Literally: "Your height is high, isn't it.")

7. 豊田(とよだ)さん（　　）背(せ)（　　）高(たか)いですねえ。

   Toyoda-san (1) se (2) takai desu nee.

   Ms. Toyoda is also tall, isn't she?

8. わたし（　　）背（　　）低いんです。

Watashi (1) se (2) hikui-n desu.

I am short. (Literally: "As for me, my height is low.")

9. きのう（　　）どんなお天気でしたか？

Kinoo (1) don-na otenki deshita ka?

How was the weather yesterday?

10. きのう（　　）雪（　　）降りました。

Kinoo (1) yuki (2) furi-mashita.

Yesterday, it snowed.

11. 今日（　　）雪（　　）降っていますか？

Kyoo (1) yuki (2) futte-imasu ka?

Is it snowing today, too?

12. いいえ、今日（　　）雪（　　）降っていません。でも霧（　　）濃いです。

lie, kyoo (1) yuki (2) futte-imasen. Demo kiri (3) koi desu.

No, today it's not snowing (although it snowed yesterday). But the fog is dense.

13. あした（　　）雨（　　）降るでしょう。

Ashita (1) ame (2) furu deshoo.

Tomorrow, it will probably rain.

14. 今日（　　）熱（　　）あります。

Kyoo (1) netsu (2) ari-masu.

Today, (I) have a fever.

15. きのう（　　）熱（　　）ありましたか？

Kinoo (1) netsu (2) ari-mashita ka?

Did you have a fever yesterday as well?

16. きのう（　　）熱（　　）ありませんでした。

Kinoo (1) netsu (2) ari-masen deshita.

Yesterday, I didn't have a fever.

17. 空（　　）青いです。

Sora (1) aoi desu.

The sky is blue.

18. 海（　　）青いです。

Umi (1) aoi desu.

The ocean is blue, too.

19. 地球（　　）青いですよ。

Chikyuu (1) aoi desu yo.

The earth is blue also.

20. 雲（　　）青いですか？

Kumo (1) aoi desu ka?

Are clouds blue as well?

21. いいえ、雲（　　）青くありません。

Iie, kumo (1) aoku ari-masen.

No, clouds aren't blue (although other things listed above are blue).

22. ほかに青いもの（　　）ありますか？

Hoka ni aoi mono (1) ari-masu ka?

Is there anything else blue?

23. 私（　　）元気です。

Watashi (1) genki desu.

I am fine, too

24. あなた（　　）元気(げんき)です。

Anata (1) genki desu.

You are fine, too.

25. だれ（　　）病気(びょうき)ですか？

Dare (1) byooki desu ka?

Who is sick?

26. 川本(かわもと)さん（　　）病気(びょうき)です。

Kawamoto-san (1) byooki desu.

Mr. Kawamoto is sick.

27. 川本(かわもと)さん（　　）どこ（　　）悪(わる)いんですか？

Kawamoto-san (1) doko (2) warui-n desu ka?

What is wrong with Mr. Kawamoto? (Literally: "As for Mr. Kawamoto, where is (he) not well (i.e. which part of him is sick)?")

28. 川本(かわもと)さん（　　）頭(あたま)（　　）おなか（　　）痛(いた)いそうです。

Kawamoto-san (1) atama (2) onaka (3) itai soo desu.

I heard that Mr. Kawamoto has both a headache and a stomachache. (Literally: "... both (his) head and stomach hurt.")

29. 万年筆(まんねんひつ)（　　）ボールペン（　　）いりません　鉛筆(えんぴつ)（　　）欲(ほ)しいんです。

Man-nen-hitsu (1) booru-pen (2) iri-masen. Enpitsu (3) hoshii-n desu.

I need neither a fountain pen nor a ball-point pen. What I need is a pencil.

30. きのう（　　）西川君と前田君（　　）遊びに来た。僕たち（　　）、野球をして遊んだ。

Kinoo (　1　) nishikawa-kun to maeda-kun (　2　) asobi-ni-kita. Boku-tachi (　3　) yakyuu o shite asonda.

Yesterday, Nishikawa and Maeda came over to play. We played baseball.

Lesson 3

Complete the sentences below, using "は(wa)", "が(ga)", "も(mo)", or "の(no)" in the parentheses.

1. 東京（　）地図（　）ありますか？

   Tookyoo (1) chizu (2) ari-masu ka?

   Do you have a map of Tokyo?

2. 大阪（　）地図（　）ありますか？

   Oosaka (1) chizu (2) ari-masu ka?

   Do you have a map of Osaka, too?

3. 大阪（　）地図（　）ありません。

   Oosaka (1) chizu (2) ari-masen.

   We don't have a map of Osaka.

4. 名古屋（　）地図（　）あります（　）…

   Nagoya (1) chizu (2) ari-masu (3)

   We have a map of Nagoya, but ...

5. じゃあ、名古屋（　）地図を見せてください。

   Jaa, nagoya (1) chizu o misete kudasai.

   Well, then please show me a map of Nagoya.

6. 君（　）何（　）食べたい？

   Kimi (1) nani (2) tabe-tai?

   What would you like to eat?

7. 僕（　）ハンバーガー（　）食べたい

   Boku (1) hanbaagaa (2) tabe-tai.

   I want to eat a hamburger.

8. 飲み物（　）何（　）いい？

Nomi-mono (1) nani (2) ii?

What would you like to drink?

9. 僕（　）のど（　）渇いたから、アイスティー（　）いいな。

Boku (1) nodo (2) kawaita kara aisu-tii (3) ii na.

As I'm thirsty, I'd like to drink iced-tea.

10. わたし（　）父（　）兄弟（　）二人います。

Watashi (1) chichi (2) kyoodai (3) futari i-masu.

My father has two brothers. (Literally: "As for my father, there are two brothers.")

11. 父（　）兄（　）弟（　）わたしにとってはおじです。

Chichi (1) ani (2) otooto (3) watashi ni totte wa oji desu.

(My) father's older brother and younger brother are both my uncles.

12. 父（　）兄（　）子供（　）いません（　）、父（　）弟（　）娘（　）二人います。

Chichi (1) ani (2) kodomo (3) i-masen (4), chichi (5) otooto (6) musume (7) futari i-masu.

(My) father's older brother doesn't have children, but (my) father's younger brother has two daughters.

13. わたし（　）母（　）兄弟（　）二人います。

Watashi (1) haha (2) kyoodai (3) futari i-masu.

My mother has two brothers as well.

14. 母（　）兄弟（　）わたしにとってはおじです。

Haha (1) kyoodai (2) watashi ni totte wa oji desu.

(My) mother's brothers are my uncles, too.

15. 今日（　　）お天気（　　）どうですか？

Kyoo (1) otenki (2) doo desu ka?

How is today's weather?

16. 今日（　　）風（　　）吹いて、雨（　　）降っています。

Kyoo (1) kaze (2) fuite, ame (3) futte imasu.

Today, it's windy and it's raining as well. (Literally: "... the wind is blowing, and the rain is falling, too.")

17. あした（　　）お天気（　　）悪いでしょうか？

Ashita (1) otenki (2) warui deshoo ka?

Will it be bad weather tomorrow, too?

18. いいえ、あした（　　）いいお天気でしょう。

Iie, ashita (1) ii otenki deshoo.

No, tomorrow will probably be good weather.

19. 鉛筆（　　）欲しいんです（　　）。

Enpitsu (1) hoshii-n desu (2).

I'd like a pencil ...

20. 何色（　　）よろしいですか？

Nani-iro (1) yoroshii desu ka?

Which color do you want? (Literally: "Which color would be good?")

21. 赤いの（　　）、黒いの（　　）あります（　　）。

Akai no (1), kuroi no (2) ari-masu (3).

There are red ones as well as black ones...

22. 黒いの（　　）欲しいです。

Kuroi no (1) hoshii desu.

I want a black one.

23. 赤いの（　　）どうですか？　それ（　　）いりません。

Akai no (　1　) doo desu ka? Sore (　2　) iri-masen.

What about a red one? That I don't need.

24. 海（　　）中に（　　）、どんな生物（　　）いますか？

Umi (　1　) naka ni (　2　), don-na seebutsu (　3　) i-masu ka?

What kinds of creatures are there in the sea?

25. 海に（　　）、魚や貝（　　）います。植物（　　）あります。

Umi ni (　1　), sakana ya kai (　2　) i-masu. Shokubutsu (　3　) ari-masu.

In the sea, there are such things as fish and shellfish. There are plants, too.

26. 赤い車（　　）いかがですか？　わたし（　　）白い車（　　）好きです。

Akai kuruma (　1　) ikaga desu ka? Watashi (　2　) shiroi kuruma (　3　) suki desu.

How about a red car? I like white cars.

27. 白い車（　　）右に、青い車（　　）ありますね。青い色のもいいですねえ。

Shiroi kuruma (　1　) migi ni, aoi kuruma (　2　) ari-masu nee. Aoi iro no mo ii-desu ne.

To the right of the white car, there is a blue car, (right)? The blue one is nice, too.

28. 僕（　　）テレビを見ているときに、おじさんと叔母さん（　　）訪ねて

きた。

Boku (1) terebi o mite-iru toki ni, oji-san to oba-san (2) tazunete kita.

When I was watching T.V., my uncle and aunt came to visit.

29. わたし（　）、スキー（　）得意です（　）、冬（　）スポーツ（　）ほとんど出来ます。スケート（　）ホッケー（　）やります。

Watashi (1), sukii (2) tokui desu (3), fuyu (4) supootsu (5) hotondo deki-masu. Sukeeto (6) hokkee (7) yari-masu.

I'm good at skiing, but I can do most winter sports. I skate and play hockey, too.

30. あの山に登ってみよう。きれいな景色（　）見えるよ。川（　）湖（　）、そして、汽車（　）見えるかも知れないよ。

Ano yama ni nobotte miyoo. Kiree na keshiki (1) mieru yo. Kawa (2) mizuumi (3), soshite, kisha (4) mieru-kamo-shire nai yo.

Let's go climb that mountain. We'll be able to see a great view. We'll be able to see a river, a lake, and possibly even a train.

Lesson 4

Complete the sentences below, using "で (de)" or "を (o)" in the parentheses.

1. あなたはどこ（　　）この辞書（　　）買いましたか？

   Anata wa doko (1) kono jisho (2) kai-mashita ka?

   Where did you buy this dictionary?

2. わたしは駅へタクシー（　　）行きました。

   Watashi wa eki e takushii (1) iki-mashita.

   I went to the station by taxi.

3. その赤い時計（　　）見せてください。

   Sono akai tokee (1) misete kudasai.

   Please show me that red clock.

4. わたしはきのうデパートの食堂（　　）スパゲッティー（　　）食べました。

   Watashi wa kinoo depaato no shokudoo (1) supagettii (2) tabe-mashita.

   Yesterday, I ate spaghetti at the restaurant in a department store.

5. このバースデーケーキ（　　）ナイフ（　　）切ってください。

   Kono baasudee-keeki (1) naifu (2) kitte kudasai.

   Please cut this birthday cake with a knife.

6. ここへ、あなたのお名前（　　）ペン（　　）書いてください。

   Koko e anata no onamae (1) pen (2) kaite kudasai.

   Please write your name here with a pen.

7. わたしは母に手紙（　　）書留（　　）送った。

Watashi wa haha ni tegami (1) kakitome (2) okutta.

I sent my mother a letter by registered mail.

8. おなかがすいた。どこ（　　）何（　　）食べよう？

Onaka ga suita. Doko (1) nani (2) tabe-yoo?

I'm hungry. Where and what shall I eat?

9. あなたはどこの学校（　　）卒業しましたか？

Anata wa doko no gakko (1) sotsugyoo-shi-mashita ka?

From which school did you graduate?

10. この道（　　）まっすぐ行くと、バス停があります。そこ（　　）バスに乗ってください。

Kono michi (1) massugu iku to, basu-tee ga ari-masu. Soko (2) basu ni notte kudasai.

If you go straight down this street, there will be a bus stop. Get on the bus there.

11. 日本（　　）は、車は道の左側（　　）走ります。

Nihon (1) wa, kuruma wa michi no hidari-gawa (2) hashiri-masu.

In Japan, cars keep to the left side of the road.

12. あしたの朝、飛行機（　　）ニューヨーク（　　）出発します。

Ashita no asa, hikooki (1) nyuuyooku (2) shuppatsu-shi-masu.

Tomorrow morning, I'm leaving New York on a plane.

13. 来週わたしのうち（　　）パーティー（　　）します。

Raishuu watashi no uchi (1) paatii (2) shi-masu.

I'm going to throw a party at my house next week.

14. このレストラン（　　）一番おいしいお料理は何ですか？

Kono restoran (　1　) ichiban oishii oryoori wa nan desu ka?

What is the best dish (served) at this restaurant?

15. 山田さんの奥さんは、ご主人（　　）亡くしてから独り（　　）アパートに住んでいます。

Yamada-san no okusan wa, goshujin (　1　) nakushite kara hitori (　2　) apaato ni sunde-imasu.

After having lost her husband, Mrs. Yamada is living alone in his apartment.

16. わたしの祖母は、今年（　　）九十歳になります。みんな（　　）お祝い（　　）します。

Watashi no sobo wa, kotoshi (　1　) kyuujus-sai ni nari-masu. Min-na (　2　) oiwai (　3　) shi-masu.

My grandmother is going to turn ninety this year. We're all going to celebrate (her birthday).

17. みんな（　　）一緒にデザート（　　）食べましょう。

Min-na (　1　) issho ni dezaato (　2　) tabe-mashoo.

Let's all have desert together.

18. 切手（　　）のり（　　）はってください。

Kitte (　1　) nori (　2　) hatte kudasai.

Please paste down the postage stamp with glue.

19. 赤ちゃん（　　）乳母車（　　）散歩に連れて行きました。

Aka-chan (　1　) uba-guruma (　2　) sanpo ni tsurete-iki-mashita.

I took the baby out for a walk in a stroller.

20. お弁当（　　）どこ（　　）食べましょうか？

Obentoo (1) doko (2) tabe-mashoo ka?

Where shall we eat our boxed lunch?

21. わたしは犬（　　）散歩に連れて行きました。公園（　　）、よその犬に出会うと、わたしの犬は、うれしそうにしっぽ（　　）振りました。

Watashi wa inu (1) sanpo ni tsurete iki-mashita. Kooen (2), yoso no inu ni de-au to, watashi no inu wa, ureshisoo ni shippo (3) furi-mashita.

I took my dog for a walk. At the park, when my dog saw another dog, it wagged its tail in delight.

22. わたしは、その英語の単語（　　）辞書（　　）調べました。

Watashi wa, sono eego no tango (1) jisho (2) shirabe-mashita.

I looked up that English word in the dictionary.

23. 今夜は、ホテル（　　）クラス会があります。わたしは、友達とタクシー（　　）拾って、ホテルまで行きます。

Konya wa, hoteru (1) kurasu-kai ga ari-masu. Watashi wa, tomodachi to takushii (2) hirotte, hoteru made iki-masu.

Tonight, there will be a class reunion at a hotel. I'm going to catch a taxi with a friend, and (that is how) we're going to go to the hotel.

24. 今日は日本語のクラス（　　）、スライド（　　）見ました。

Kyoo wa nihongo no kurasu (1), suraido (2) mi-mashita.

Today in Japanese class we saw slides.

25. こんな所（　　）昼寝（　　）していると、風邪（　　）引きますよ。

Kon-na tokoro (1) hirune (2) shite-iru to, kaze (3) hiki-masu yo.

If you take a nap at a place like this, you'll catch cold.

26. わたしはデパート（　）このコイン入(い)れ（　）千円(せんえん)（　）買(か)いました。

Watashi wa depaato (1) kono koin-ire (2) sen en (3) kai-mashita.

I bought this change purse for one thousand yen at a department store.

27. あの学校(がっこう)の前(まえ)（　）車(くるま)（　）止(と)めてください。

Ano gakko no mae (1) kuruma (2) tomete kudasai.

Please stop the car in front of that school.

28. シャンペン（　）チームの優勝(ゆうしょう)（　）祝(いわ)いましょう。

Shanpen (1) chiimu no yuushoo (2) iwai-mashoo.

Let's celebrate our victory with champagne.

29. この定期券(ていきけん)は、期限(きげん)が切(き)れていますね。あそこの窓口(まどぐち)（　）新(あたら)しいの（　）買(か)ってください。

Kono teekiken wa, kigen ga kirete-imasu ne. Asoko no mado-guchi (1) atarashii no (2) katte kudasai.

Your (train/bus) pass is no longer valid. Please buy a new one at that ticket window.

30. 今日(きょう)は、隅田川(すみだがわ)（　）花火大会(はなびたいかい)があります。あそこの高(たか)い建物(たてもの)の屋上(おくじょう)（　）花火(はなび)（　）見(み)ましょう。

Kyoo wa, sumidagawa (1) hanabi-taikai ga ari-masu. Asoko no takai tatemono no okujoo (2) hanabi (3) mi-mashoo.

Today, there's going to be fireworks over (at) the Sumida River. Let's watch the fireworks from the rooftop of that tall building.

Lesson 5

Complete the sentences below, using "で(de)", "を(o)" or "に(ni)" ("へ(e)") in the parentheses.

1. わたしは子供達（　　）バス（　　）お祭り（　　）連れて行きました。

   Watashi wa, kodomo-tachi (　1　) basu (　2　) omatsuri (　3　) tsurete iki-mashita.

   I took my children to the festival by bus.

2. わたしは京都（　　）行きたいんですが、この電車（　　）いいでしょうか？

   Watashi wa kyooto (　1　) ikitai-n desu ga, kono densha (　2　) ii deshoo ka?

   I'd like to go to Kyoto, (but) is this the right train?

3. 僕は喫茶店（　　）彼女（　　）サンドイッチ（　　）ごちそうしました。

   Boku wa kissa-ten (　1　) kanojo (　2　) sandoicchi (　3　) gochisoo shi-mashita.

   I bought her a sandwich at a coffee shop.

4. わたしはニューヨーク（　　）住みたいから、新聞（　　）アパート（　　）探しています。

   Watashi wa nyuuyooku (　1　) sumitai kara, shinbun (　2　) apaato (　3　) sagashite-imasu.

   Because I want to live in New York, I am looking for an apartment through the newspaper.

5. わたしの鉛筆（　　）どこ（　　）置いたの？

Watashi no enpitsu (1) doko (2) oita no?

Where did you put my pencil?

6. 今晩何時（　）、どこ（　）会いましょうか？

Konban nanji (1) doko (2) ai-mashoo ka?

Where and when shall we meet tonight?

7. わたしはペンフレンド（　）日本語（　）手紙（　）書きました。

Watashi wa pen-furendo (1) nihongo (2) tegami (3) kaki-mashita.

I wrote a letter to my penpal in Japanese.

8. 僕は、いつか船（　）ハワイ（　）行きたい。そして、そこ（　）サーフィン（　）したい。

Boku wa, itsuka fune (1) hawai (2) ikitai. Soshite, soko (3) saafin (4) shitai.

Some day I'd like to go to Hawaii by boat. Then, I'd like to go surfing there.

9. スーパーマーケット（　）自転車（　）パン（　）買いに行きました。

Suupaa-maaketto (1) jitensha (2) pan (3) kai ni iki-mashita.

I went to the supermarket by bicycle to buy some bread.

10. わたしは一日（　）一度母（　）電話（　）します。

Watashi wa ichi-nichi (1) ichi-do haha (2) denwa (3) shi-masu.

I call my mother once every day.

11. 三日後（　）またここ（　）会いましょう。

Mikka-go (1) mata koko (2) ai-mashoo.

Let's meet again here in three days.

12. ロンドン（　）行く飛行機は、何時（　）空港（　）出発しますか？

Rondon (1) iku hikooki wa, nanji (2) kuukoo (3) shuppatsu shi-masu ka?

When will the plane for London leave the airport?

13. わたしは財布（　）うち（　）忘れてきた。

Watashi wa saifu (1) uchi (2) wasurete kita.

I forgot my wallet at home (and came here).

14. 彼は、毎朝七時半（　）うち（　）出て、自動車（　）ハイウエー（　）走って会社（　）行きます。

Kare wa, maiasa shichiji-han (1) uchi (2) dete, jidoosha (3) haiuee (4) hashitte kaisha (5) iki-masu.

Every morning, he leaves his house at seven-thirty and drives on the highway to get to his office.

15. 僕は夜中（　）、洗面所（　）、ゴキブリ（　）見つけた。

Boku wa yonaka (1), senmenjo (2), gokiburi (3) mitsuketa.

I found a cockroach in the washroom at midnight.

16. 刈谷君はテスト（　）百点（　）取った。

Kariya-kun wa tesuto (1) hyaku-ten (2) totta.

Kariya got a hundred (A^+) on the test.

17. 今日は寒いから、みんな（　）一緒（　）うちの中（　）、ゲーム（　）しましょう。

Kyoo wa samui kara, min-na (1) issho (2) uchi no naka (3), geemu (4) shi-mashoo.

Since it's cold outside today, let's all play a game inside the house.

18. 僕は、お昼（　）食べ（　）レストラン（　）行って、そこ（　）財布（　）なくしてしまった。

Boku wa, ohiru (1) tabe (2) resutoran (3) itte, soko (4) saifu (5) nakushite shimatta.

I went to a restaurant to eat lunch, and lost my wallet (there).

19. わたしは、妹と一緒（　）デパート（　）買物（　）行きました。

Watashi wa, imooto to issho (1) depaato (2) kaimono (3) iki-mashita.

I went shopping at a department store with my sister.

20. あと（　）デザート（　）アイスクリーム（　）食べましょう。

Ato (1) dezaato (2) aisukuriimu (3) tabe-mashoo.

Let's have ice cream for dessert later.

21. ヘリコプター（　）乗って、空（　）飛んでみたいなあ。

Herikoputaa (1) notte, sora (2) tonde-mitai naa.

I want to fly through the air in a helicopter.

22. あした学校（　）先生（　）聞いてみよう。

Ashita gakko (1) sensee (2) kiite-miyoo.

I'll ask my teacher (about it) at school tomorrow.

23. お兄さん（　）わからない単語の意味（　）聞いたら、「辞書（　）調べてごらん」だって。

Oniisan (1) wakara-nai tango no imi (2) kiitara, "jisho (3) shirabete goran" datte.

My older brother said, "Look it up in the dictionary," when I asked him the meaning of a word that I didn't know.

24. 机の上（　）あった友達の写真（　）、どこ（　）しまったのか忘れた。

Tsukue no ue (1) atta tomodachi no shashin (2), doko (3) shimatta no ka wasureta.

I forgot where I put the picture of my friend which had been on the desk.

25. ああ、駅ですか？　あの橋（　）渡って、最初の信号（　）右（　）曲って、その道（　）まっすぐ行くと、左のほう（　）ありますよ。

Aa, eki desu ka? Ano hashi (1) watatte, saisho no shingoo (2) migi (3) magatte, sono michi (4) massugu iku to, hidari no hoo (5) ari-masu yo.

"Oh, the station? Go across that bridge, turn right at the first traffic light, (then) keep going straight on that road, then you'll see the station on your left."

26. あしたは、学校（　）、加藤先生のセミナー（　）出席しなければならないから、今夜十時まで（　）タイプ（　）レポート（　）作ろう。

Ashita wa, gakkoo (1), katoo - sensee no seminaa (2) shusekki-shi-nakere ba nara nai kara, konya juuji made (3) taipu (4) repooto (5) tsukuroo.

Since I will have to attend Prof. Katoh's seminar at school tomorrow, I'll type my report by ten o'clock tonight.

27. パーティー（　　）どんなドレス（　　）着て行こうかしら？　彼は、ブラックタイ（　　）行くっていったけど。

Paatii (　1　) don-na doresu (　2　) kite ikoo kashira? Kare wa, burakku-tai (　3　) ikutte itta kedo.

What sort of dress shall I wear to the party? He was saying that he would go in black-tie.

28. 今日は暖かいから、この鉢植え（　　）外（　　）出して、水（　　）やってくれない？

Kyoo wa atatakai kara, kono hachi-ue (　1　) soto (　2　) da-shite, mizu (　3　) yatte-kure nai?

It's warm today, so could you take these plants outside and water them?

29. のどが渇いたから、あの喫茶店（　　）コーヒー（　　）飲んでからうち（　　）帰りましょう。

Nodo ga kawaita kara, ano kissa-ten (　1　) koohii (　2　) nonde kara uchi (　3　) kaeri-mashoo.

I'm thirsty, so let's go home after we have coffee at that coffee shop.

30. そのおすし（　　）おはし（　　）このお皿（　　）とってください。それから、この小さいお皿（　　）おしょうゆ（　　）少し入れて、わさび（　　）つけて食べてください。

Sono osushi (　1　) ohashi (　2　) kono osara (　3　) totte kudasai. Sore kara, kono chiisai osara (　4　) oshooyu (　5　) sukoshi irete, wasabi (　6　) tsukete tabete kudasai.

Please put the sushi onto this plate with the chopsticks. Then, pour a little bit of soy sauce onto this small plate, and eat it with the wasabi.

Lesson 6

Complete the sentences below, using "から(kara)", "に(ni)", ("へ(e)"), "まで(made)", or "までに(madeni)" in the parentheses.

1. コンサートホール（　　）たくさん人が出てきました。

   Konsaato-hooru (　1　) takusan hito ga dete ki-mashita.

   A crowd of people came out of the recital hall.

2. 君、きのうは何時（　　）テレビを見たの？

   Kimi, kinoo wa nanji (　1　) terebi o mita no?

   Until what time did you watch T.V. last night?

3. あなたはいつ（　　）この村に住んでいますか？

   Anata wa itsu (　1　) kono mura ni sunde i-masu ka?

   How long have you lived in this village?

4. わたしは去年の六月に東京（　　）大阪（　　）来ました。来年の三月（　　）大阪にいます。それから、また東京（　　）帰ります。

   Watashi wa kyonen no rokugatsu ni tookyoo (　1　) oosaka (　2　) ki-mashita. Rainen no sangatsu (　3　) oosaka ni i-masu. Sorekara, mata tookyoo (　4　) kaeri-masu.

   I came to Osaka from Tokyo in June of last year. I'll be in Osaka until March of next year. Then, I'm going to go back to Tokyo.

5. ワシントン（　　）モスクワ（　　）、飛行機で、どれくらいかかりますか？

   Washinton (　1　) mosukuwa (　2　), hikooki de, dore kurai kakari-masu ka?

   How long does it take from Washington D.C. to Moscow by plane?

6. 今日はストライキで電車が走っていません（　　）、うち（　　）会社（　　）歩いて行きました。

Kyoo wa sutoraiki de, densha ga hashitte i-masen (1), uchi (2) kaisha (3) aruite iki-mashita.

Because there was no train service today due to the strike, I walked to my office from my house.

7. 空（　　）いん石が落ちてきた。

Sora (1) inseki ga ochite kita.

A meteorite came falling out of the sky.

8. 東京（　　）京都（　　）、新幹線で二時間半ぐらいかかります。

Tookyoo (1) kyooto (2), shinkansen de nijikan-han gurai kakari-masu.

It takes two and half hours from Tokyo to Kyoto by Shinkan-sen (bullet train).

9. 僕は、今日は疲れた（　　）遊びに行かない。

Boku wa, kyoo wa tsukareta (1) asobi ni ika nai.

Because I'm tired today, I'm not going to go out to have fun.

10. わたしは、金曜日（　　）（　　）日本語の作文を書かなければならない（　　）、映画を見るのは来週（　　）待ってください。

Watashi wa, kin-yoobi (1) (2) nihongo no sakubun o kaka-nakereba nara-nai (3), eega o miru no wa raishuu (4) matte kudasai.

As I have to finish writing a Japanese composition by this Friday, please (could we) wait until next week to see a movie.

11. わたしは広島（　　）行きたいんですが、電車は何番線（　　）出ます

か？

Watashi wa, hiroshima (1) ikitai-n desu ga, densha wa nanban-sen (2) de-masu ka?

I'd like to go to Hiroshima, (but) from which platform will the train leave?

12. 指輪をなくしたので、部屋の隅（　　）隅（　　）探しましたが、見つかりませんでした。

Yubiwa o naku-shita node, heya no sumi (1) sumi (2) sagashi-mashita ga, mitsukari-masen deshita.

I lost my ring, so I looked for it everywhere in my room, but it couldn't be found.

13. 飛行機が出る（　　）まだ二時間あります。食事をして（　　）コーヒーでも飲みましょう。

Hikooki ga deru (1) mada ni-jikan ari-masu. Shokuji o shite (2) koohii de mo nomi-mashoo.

We still have two more hours until the departure of our flight. Let's eat something and then have some coffee.

14. この漫画は面白い（　　）君（　　）貸してあげるよ。

Kono manga wa omoshiroi (1) kimi (2) kashite ageru yo.

This comic book is funny, so I'll lend it to you.

15. 空が暗くなってきた（　　）また雨が降るよ。梅雨はいつ（　　）続くのだろう。

Sora ga kuraku natte-kita (1) mata ame ga furu yo. Tsuyu wa itsu (2) tsuzuku no daroo.

The sky is getting dark, so it's going to rain again. I wonder how much

longer the rainy season will continue?

16. 果物屋（　）行ったら、バナナがとても安かった（　）、おやつ（　）買ってきた。

Kudamono-ya (1) ittara, banana ga totemo yasukatta (2), oyatsu (3) katte kita.

I went to a fruit shop, and I found their bananas so cheap that I bought some for snacks.

17. とても暑い日だった（　）、わたしは六時（　）涼しいオフィス（　）いました。

Totemo atsui hi datta (1), watashi wa rokuji (2) suzushii ofisu (3) i-mashita.

Since it was a very hot day, I stayed at the cool (air-conditioned) office until six o'clock.

18. 浜田さんは、六十歳（　）銀行（　）勤めました（　）、退職しました。

Hamada-san wa, rokujus-sai (1) ginkoo (2) tsutome-mashita (3), taishoku shi-mashita.

As Mr. Hamada worked at the bank until he was sixty years old, he has now retired.

19. わたしは、生まれて（　）今（　）スキーをしたことがありません。

Watashi wa, umarete (1) ima (2) sukii o shita koto ga ari-masen.

I've never skied in my life. (Literally: Between the time I was born until now ...)

20. この宿題は、いつ（　）（　）出さなければなりませんか？

Kono shukudai wa, itsu (1) (2) dasa-nakereba nari-masen ka?

By when do I have to hand in this homework to you?

21. 隣(となり)の家(いえ)（　　）火(ひ)が出(で)て、明(あ)け方(がた)（　　）（　　）三軒(さんげん)が全焼(ぜんしょう)した。

Tonari no ie (1) hi ga dete, akegata (2) (3) sangen ga zenshoo shita.

The fire started at my neighbor's, and by dawn, three houses were completely lost in the fire.

22. 僕(ぼく)は、クリスマス（　　）サンタクロース（　　）ミットをもらった。

Boku wa, kurisumasu (1) santakuroosu (2) mitto o moratta.

On Christmas, I got a baseball mitt from Santa Claus.

23. 今回(こんかい)のサミットミーティング（　　）、日本(にほん)（　　）首相(しゅしょう)と二人(ふたり)の大臣(だいじん)が参加(さんか)した。

Konkai no samitto-miitingu (1), nihon (2) shushoo to futari no daijin ga sanka-shita.

For this Summit Meeting, Japan sent the Prime Minister, accompanied by two ministers.

24. 朝(あさ)（　　）頭(あたま)が痛(いた)かった（　　）、わたしは今日学校(きょうがっこう)（　　）行(い)きませんでした。

Asa (1) atama ga itakatta (2), watashi wa kyoo gakko (3) iki-masen deshita.

Because I had a headache until this morning, I didn't go to school today.

25. わたし達(たち)は、横浜(よこはま)（　　）電車(でんしゃ)で行(い)って（　　）、バス（　　）乗(の)り換(か)えて、ホテル（　　）行(い)きましたが、ほかの人達(ひとたち)は、そのとき（　　）

（　　）、もうホテル（　　）着いていました。

Watashi-tachi wa, yokohama (　1　) densha de itte (　2　), basu (　3　) norikaete, hoteru (　4　) iki-mashita ga, hoka no hito-tachi wa, sono toki (　5　) (　6　), moo hoteru (　7　) tsuite i-mashita.

We took a train as far as Yokohama, then (from there), we transfered and got on the bus to the hotel, but the others had already arrived at the hotel by that time.

26. あしたはオフィスで朝九時（　　）ミーティングがある（　　）、八時半（　　）（　　）オフィス（　　）行かなければならない。

Ashita wa ofiisu de asa kuji (　1　) miitingu ga aru (　2　), hachi-ji han (　3　)(　4　) ofisu (　5　) ika-nakere ba nara-nai.

As I will have to attend a meeting in my office at nine o'clock tomorrow morning, I have to be in my office by eight-thirty.

27. 今日は残業（　　）ある（　　）、わたしは会社（　　）九時（　　）いて、それからうち（　　）帰ります。

Kyoo wa zangyoo (　1　) aru (　2　), watashi wa kaisha (　3　) kuji (　4　) ite, sore kara uchi (　5　) kaeri-masu.

Because I have to work overtime today, I will be at my office until nine o'clock, then I will go home.

28. 船で沖（　　）行って（　　）、わたしは海の中（　　）潜った。太陽の光が海底（　　）届いて、夢の国（　　）行ったようにきれいだった。

Fune de oki (　1　) itte (　2　), watashi wa umi no naka (　3　) mogutta. Taiyoo no hikari ga kaitee (　4　) todoite, yume no kuni (　5　) itta-yoo ni kiree datta.

After I went off shore by boat, I dove into the sea. The sun's rays reached all the way down to the bottom of the sea, and it was as if I had wondered into a dream, it was so beautiful.

29. あなたは、先月（　）今日（　）（　）、図書館（　）何冊本を借りましたか？

Anata wa, sengetsu (1) kyoo (2) (3), tosho-kan (4) nansatsu hon o kari-mashita ka?

How many books have you borrowed from the library since last month (until today)?

30. 中国（　）いる兄（　）わたし（　）手紙が来た。来年の夏（　）中国語を勉強して（　）、九月（　）（　）日本（　）帰るそうだ。

Chuugoku (1) iru ani (2) watashi (3) tegami ga kita. Rainen no natsu (4) chuugokugo o benkyoo shite (5), kugatsu (6) (7) nihon (8) kaeru-soo da.

A letter (addressed to me) came from my brother in China. He wrote that after studying Chinese there until next summer, he would come back to Japan by September.

Lesson 7

Complete the sentences below, using either "と (to)," "や (ya)," "だけ (dake)," "しか (shika)," or "くらい (kurai [ぐらい gurai])" in the parentheses.

1. 赤い鉛筆は、これ（　　）ですか？　はい、それ（　　）です。

   Akai enpitsu wa, kore (　1　) desu ka? Hai, sore (　2　) desu.

   Is this the only red pencil? Yes, there is only that one.

2. 僕は、和夫君（　　）幸二君（　　）文男君（　　）かくれんぼをしました。

   Boku wa, kazuo-kun (　1　) kooji-kun (　2　) fumio-kun (　3　) kakurenbo o shi-mashita.

   I played hide-and-seek with (such friends as) Kazuo, Kooji, and Fumio.

3. わたしは、今朝コーヒー（　　）ジュース（　　）飲みました。

   Watashi wa, kesa koohii (　1　) juusu (　2　) nomi-mashita.

   I only drank coffee and juice for breakfast this morning.

4. 僕は、今朝オムレツ（　　）サラダ（　　）食べませんでした。

   I didn't eat anything but an omlet and a salad this morning.

5. 星が、いくつ（　　）見えますか？
   僕は三つ（　　）見えるよ。わたしは一つ（　　）見えないわ。

   Hoshi ga, ikutsu (　1　) mie-masu ka?

   Boku wa mittsu (　2　) mieru yo. Watashi wa hitotsu (　3　) mie-nai wa.

(Approximately) how many stars can you see in the sky? I can see only three stars. I can see only one.

6. あしたの遠足には、サンドイッチ（　　）果物（　　）あめを持って行こう。

Ashita no ensoku ni wa, sandoicchi (1) kudamono (2) ame o motte ikoo.

I'll take a sandwich, some fruit, and some candies on the picnic tomorrow.

7. 僕は、お握り（　　）、お菓子（　　）飲み物をもって行くよ。

Boku wa, onigiri (1), okashi (2) nomi-mono o motte iku yo.

I'll bring some onigiri (rice balls) and things like cookies and beverages.

8. わたしは、お弁当（　　）飲み物（　　）持って行かないわ。

Watashi wa, obentoo (1) nomi-mono (2) motte ika-nai wa.

I'll only bring a boxed lunch and beverages.

9. それだけ？　お弁当（　　）飲み物（　　）じゃおなかがすくでしょう？果物を二つ（　　）持って行きなさいよ。

Sore dake? Obentoo (1) nomi-mono (2) jaa onaka ga suku deshoo? Kudamono o futatsu (3) motte iki-nasai yo.

That's all? You'll be hungry with only a boxed lunch and beverages. Why don't you bring a couple of pieces of fruit or so.

10. 今日の父兄会に、両親が来たのは、僕（　　）で、全部で三十人（　　）来たけれど、父親は五人（　　）来なかった。

Kyoo no fukee-kai ni ryooshin ga kita no wa, boku (1) de,

zenbu de sanjuu-nin (2) kita keredo, chichi-oya wa go-nin (3) ko-nakatta.

Among the parents who attended today's P.T.A., I was the only one whose parents both came, and thirty parents came altogether, but there were only five fathers who came.

11. わたし、今日二百円（　　）持っていないの。啓三君、五百円（　　）貸してくれない？

Watashi, kyoo ni-hyaku en (1) motte i-nai no. Keezoo-kun, go-hyaku en (2) kashite-kure-nai?

I have only two hundred yen with me today. Keezo, could you lend me about five hundred yen?

12. あなたの家から駅まで車でどれ（　　）かかりますか？

Anata no ie kara eki made kuruma de dore (1) kakari-masu ka?

How long does it take from your house to the station by car?

13. 東京から札幌まで何キロ（　　）ありますか？

Tookyoo kara sapporo made nan-kiro (1) ari-masu ka?

How many kilometers are there between Tokyo and Sapporo?

14. 僕の友達（　　）先生は、寒い寒いと言っているけれど、これ（　　）の寒さは平気だよ。僕はＴシャツ一枚（　　）着ていないよ。

Boku no tomodachi (1) sensee wa, samui samui to itte-iru keredo, kore (2) no samusa wa heeki da yo. Boku wa tii-shatsu ichi-mai (3) kite-i-nai yo.

(People like) my friends and my teacher keep saying that it's cold, but cold weather like this doesn't bother me at all. I'm only wearing a T-shirt.

15. ビーフ（　　）チキン（　　）どちらが好きですか？

Biifu (　1　) chikin (　2　) dochira ga suki desu ka?

Which do you like better, beef or chicken?

16. 「君を愛しているよ」（　　）言って欲しいのに、喫茶店（　　）レストランに入っても、彼は黙っている（　　）です。

"Kimi o aishite iru yo," (　1　) itte-hoshii no ni, kissa-ten (　2　) resutoran ni haitte mo, kare wa damatte-iru (　3　) desu.

I want him to say (to me), "I love you," but when we go to (places like) a coffee shop or a restaurant, he only remains silent.

17. 今年は一週間（　　）休みがとれないから、旅行は中国（　　）にしようと思ったけれど、もう二日（　　）休みが取れそうだから、タイにも行こうと思う。

Kotoshi wa isshuu-kan (　1　) yasumi ga tore-nai kara, ryokoo wa chuugoku (　2　) ni shiyoo to omotta keredo, moo futsuka (　3　) yasumi ga tore-soo da kara, tai nimo ikoo to omou.

Since I could only take one week for vacation this year, I had planned just to travel around China, but now since it looks like I can get two more days off, I hope to go to Thailand, as well.

18. 今晩のおかずこれ（　　）（　　）ないの？　サラダ（　　）食べたいなあ。

Konban no okazu kore (　1　) (　2　) nai no? Sarada (　3　) tabe-tai naa.

Is this all we're having for dinner tonight? I wish I could have (at least) a salad as well.

19. 今日の数学の宿題は二ページ（　　）なのに、まだ半分（　　）出来て

いない。

Kyoo no suugaku no shukudai wa ni-peeji (1) na no ni, mada hanbun (2) dekitei-nai.

The math homework for today is only two pages, but I've only done half of it.

20. あしたは、京都（　）奈良へ修学旅行に行くのだと思うと、うれしくて、二時間（　）（　）眠れなかった。

Ashita wa, kyooto (1) nara e shuugaku-ryokoo ni iku noda to omou to, ureshikute, ni-jikan (2) (3) nemure-na-katta.

When I thought about going to Kyoto and Nara tomorrow on the school trip, I was so excited that I could only sleep for about two hours.

Lesson 8

Complete the sentences below, using "と(to)," "で(de)," "の(no)," "より (yori)" or "ほど(hodo)" in the parentheses.

1. この時計（　　）あの時計（　　）、どちら（　　）ほうが安いですか？

   Kono tokee (1) ano tokee (2), dochira (3) hoo ga yasui desu ka?

   Which is more inexpensive, this watch or that watch?

2. コーヒー（　　）紅茶（　　）どちらがいいですか?

   Koohii (1) koocha (2) dochira ga ii desu ka?

   Which would you like to have, coffee or tea?

3. わたしはコーヒー（　　）紅茶（　　）ほうが飲みたいです。

   Watashi wa koohii (1) koocha (2) hoo ga nomi-tai desu.

   I'd rather drink tea than coffee.

4. 僕は紅茶はコーヒー（　　）好きじゃありません。

   Boku wa koocha wa koohii (1) suki ja ari-masen.

   I don't like tea as much as I like coffee.

5. きのう（　　）今日（　　）ほうが寒いですね。でも北海道（　　）寒くありませんよ。

   Kinoo (1) kyoo (2) hoo ga samui desu ne. Demo hokkaidoo (3) samuku-arimasen yo.

   It's colder today than it was yesterday, isn't it? But it's not as cold as Hokkaido.

6. この仕事は、あなた（　　）わたし（　　）やりましょう。

   Kono shigoto wa, anata (1) watashi (2) yari-mashoo.

Let's you and I do this work.

7. すきやき（　）おすし（　）天ぷら（　）うち（　）どれが一番お好きですか？

Sukiyaki (1) osushi (2) tempura (3) uchi (4) dore ga ichiban osuki desu ka?

Of sukiyaki, sushi, and tempura, which do you like best?

8. わたしは姉（　）背が高くありませんが、妹（　）高いです。

Watashi wa ane (1) se ga takaku-ari-masen ga, imooto (2) takai desu.

I'm not as tall as my elder sister, but I'm taller than my younger sister.

9. 京都から（　）名古屋から（　）ほうが東京に近いです。

Kyooto kara (1) nagoya kara (2) hoo ga tookyoo ni chikai desu.

It is closer to Tokyo from Nagoya than from Kyoto.

10. 汽車（　）行く（　）バス（　）行くほうが安いですよ。

Kisha (1) iku (2) basu (3) iku hoo ga yasui desu yo.

It is cheaper to go by bus than by train.

11. 今日はおととい（　）暑いけれど、きのう（　）暑くない。

Kyoo wa ototoi (1) atsui keredo, kinoo (2) atsuku-nai.

It's warmer today than it was the day before yesterday, but not as warm as yesterday.

12. 君（　）、君のお父さん（　）、お兄さん（　）（　）、だれが朝一番早く起きますか？

Kimi (1), kimi no otoosan (2), oniisan (3) (4),

dare ga asa ichiban hayaku oki-masu ka?

Among you, your father, and your brother, who gets up the earliest in the morning?

13. 僕は、数学（　）生物（　）ほうが好きだ。国語は、歴史（　）好きじゃない。

Boku wa, suugaku (1) seebutsu (2) hoo ga suki da. Kokugo wa rekishi (3) suki ja nai.

I like biology better than math. I don't like Japanese as much as history.

14. ニューヨーク（　）東京（　）は、どちら（　）ほうが人口が多いですか？

Nyuuyooku (1) tookyoo (2) wa, dochira (3) hoo ga jinkoo ga ooi desu ka?

Which has a greater population, New York or Tokyo?

15. あのスーパー（　）買ったバナナ（　）、このスーパー（　）バナナ（　）ほうが、ずっと安い。

Ano suupaa (1) katta banana (2), kono suupaa (3) banana (4) hoo ga zutto yasui.

The bananas at this supermarket are much cheaper than the bananas I bought at that supermarket.

16. 自転車（　）バイク（　）はどちら（　）ほうが速いですか？　バイク（　）ほうが、自転車（　）速いですよ。

Jitensha (1) baiku (2) wa dochira (3) hoo ga hayai desu ka? Baiku (4) hoo ga, jitensha (5) hayai desu yo.

Which is faster, a bicycle or a motorcycle? A motorcycle is faster than

a bicycle.

17. 友達（　　）京都（　　）旅館に泊まりました。二人（　　）一泊五万円でした。

Tomodachi (　1　) kyooto (　2　) ryokan ni tomari-mashita. Futari (　3　) ip-paku ni-man en deshita.

I stayed at a Japanese style inn in Kyoto with my friend. The charge was twenty thousand yen for the two of us for the night.

18. わたしは兄（　　）背が高くありませんが、靴（　　）サイズは、兄の（　　）大きいです。

Watashi wa ani (　1　) se ga takaku-ari-masen ga, kutsu (　2　) saizu wa, ani no (　3　) ookii desu.

I'm not as tall as my (elder) brother, but my shoe size is larger than his.

19. 今日は弟（　　）誕生日です。母（　　）わたし（　　）（　　）お祝い（　　）ごちそうを作りました。ケーキは去年（　　）ずっと上手に出来ました。

Kyoo wa otooto (　1　) tanjoobi desu. Haha (　2　) watashi (　3　) (　4　) oiwai (　5　) gochisoo o tsukuri-mashita. Keeki wa kyonen (　6　) zutto joozu ni deki-mashita.

Today is my brother's birthday. My mother and I cooked a feast to celebrate. The cake we made this year was much better than the one we made last year.

20. 僕は弟と、大学（　　）合格発表を見に行った。たくさん（　　）人（　　）いっはいだったが、僕は普通（　　）背が高いから、遠くから、自分（　　）番号がよく見えた。合格だ！　今日（　　）うれしい日はない。

Boku wa otooto to, daigaku (1) gookaku-happyoo o mini-itta. Takusan (2) hito (3) ippai datta ga, boku wa futsuu (4) se ga takai kara, tooku kara, jibun (5) bangoo ga yoku mieta. Gookaku da! Kyoo (6) ureshii hi wa nai.

My brother and I went to the college to see the acceptance list. It was packed full of people, but since I'm taller than average, I could see my number well from a distance. I'd been accepted! I've never been happier than (I am) today.

Lesson 9

Comprehension Exercises. Complete the sentences below, using appropriate particles.

My Experience Living in Japan (A):

1. わたし（　）名前（　）ブレンダ（　）いいます。

   Watashi (1) namae (2) burenda (3) ii-masu

   My name is Brenda.

2. わたし（　）、今学期（　）、この大学（　）日本語（　）勉強します。

   Watashi (1), kon-gakki (2), kono daigaku (3) nihongo (4) benkyoo-shi-masu.

   I'm going to study Japanese at this college starting this semester.

3. わたし（　）、去年（　）十二月二十日（　）、シカゴ（　）東京（　）来ました。

   Watashi (1), kyonen (2) juuni-gatsu hatsuka (3), shikago (4) tookyoo (5) ki-mashita.

   I came to Tokyo from Chicago on December 20 of last year.

4. （わたし（　））日本（　）初めてです（　）、シカゴ（　）大学（　）日本語（　）勉強（　）しましたし、日本人（　）お友達（　）たくさんいました（　）、初めてのような気（　）あまりしません。

   (Watashi (1)) nihon (2) hajimete desu (3), shikago (4) daigaku (5) nihongo (6) benkyoo (7) shi-mashita shi, nihonjin (8) otomodachi (9) takusan i-mashita

(10), hajimete no yoo na ki (11) amari shi-masen.

This is my first time in Japan, but I studied Japanese at a college in Chicago, and had many Japanese friends (there), so I don't feel very much like I'm (here) for the first time.

5. この大学(だいがく)（　）（　）、日本語(にほんご)（　）ではなく、日本(にほん)（　）文化(ぶんか)（　）歴史(れきし)（　）経済(けいざい)（　）勉強(べんきょう)します。

Kono daigaku (1) (2), nihongo (3) de wa naku, nihon (4) bunka (5) rekishi (6) keezai (7) benkyoo-shi-masu.

At this college, I'm going to study not only Japanese language but also Japanese culture, history, and economics as well.

6. シカゴ（　）大学(だいがく)（　）いた時(とき)（　）、寮(りょう)（　）住(す)んでいました（　）、東京(とうきょう)（　）（　）ホームステイ（　）しています。ホストファミリー（　）黒川(くろかわ)さん（　）いいます。

Shikago (1) daigaku (2) ita toki (3), ryoo (4) sunde-imashita (5) tookyoo (6) (7) hoomustee (8) shite-imasu. Hosuto famirii (9) kurokawa-san (10) ii-masu.

When I was at the college in Chicago, I lived in a dormitory, but in Tokyo, I'm staying with a host family. My family is the Kurokawas.

7. ご主人(しゅじん)（　）黒川(くろかわ)さん（　）、貿易会社(ぼうえきがいしゃ)（　）社長(しゃちょう)さんです。

Goshujin (1) kurokawa-san (2), booeki-gaisha (3) shachoo-san desu.

Mr. Kurokawa, the husband, is the president of a trading company.

8. 奥(おく)さん（　）昭子(あきこ)さん（　）、生(い)け花(ばな)（　）先生(せんせい)です。

Okusan (1) akiko-san (2), ikebana (3) sensee desu.

His wife, Akiko, is a teacher of flower arrangement.

9. 一番上（　）お嬢さん（　）、結婚して、二歳（　）男（　）子（　）います。

Ichiban ue (1) ojoosan (2), kekkon-shite, nisai (3) otoko (4) ko (5) i-masu.

Their eldest daughter is married, and has a two-year old boy.

10. 二番目（　）お嬢さん（　）、名前（　）きみ子（　）いって、わたし（　）同じ年です。

Niban-me (1) ojoosan (2), namae (3) kimiko (4) itte, watashi (5) onaji toshi desu.

Their second daughter is named Kimiko, and she is my age.

11. きみ子さん（　）下（　）、伸二（　）いう弟（　）います（　）、彼（　）高校一年生です。

Kimiko-san (1) shita (2), shinji (2) yuu otooto (4) imasu (5), kare (6) kookoo ichi-nen-see desu.

Kimiko has a younger brother, Shinji; he is a first-year student in high school.

12. わたし（　）シカゴ（　）いた時（　）、きみ子さん（　）文通（　）していました（　）、姉妹のように仲良しです。

Watashi (1) shikago (2) ita toki (3), kimiko-san (4) buntsuu (5) shite-imashita (6), kyoodai no yoo ni nakayoshi desu.

Because I had been exchanging letters with Kimiko while I was in

Chicago, we are very good friends, like real sisters.

13. 先週（　）日曜日（　）、きみ子さん（　）お父さん（　）、きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）、車（　）ディズニーランド（　）連れて行ってくださいました。

Senshuu (1) nichiyoobi (2), kimiko-san (3) otoosan (4) kimiko-san (5), watashi (6), kuruma (7) dizunii-rando (8) tsurete-itte kudasai-mashita.

Last Sunday, Kimiko's father took Kimiko and me to Disneyland.

14. わたし（　）アメリカ（　）ディズニーランド（　）（　）行ったこと（　）あります（　）、東京（　）ディズニーランド（　）アメリカ（　）（　）そっくりで、びっくりしました。

Watashi (1) amerika (2) dizunii-rando (3) (4) itta-koto (5) arimasu (6), tookyoo (7) dizunii-rando (8) amerika (9) (10) sokkuri de, bikkuri-shi-mashita.

I have also been to Disneyland in the U.S. I was surprised that the Disneyland in Tokyo was so similar to the one in the U.S.

15. ディズニーランド（　）遊んで（　）、東京タワー（　）登りました。

Dizunii-rando (1) asonde (2), tookyoo-tawaa (3) nobori-mashita.

After we had fun at Disneyland, we went up the Tokyo Tower.

16. 夜（　）みんな（　）、おすし屋さん（　）行きました。カウンター（　）いす（　）腰かけて、握りずし（　）注文しました。

Yoru (1) min-na (2), osushi-ya-san (3) iki-mashita.

Kauntaa (4) isu (5) koshi-kakete, nigiri-zushi (6) chuumon-shi-mashita.

In the evening, we went to a sushi restaurant. We sat on tall stools at the counter and ordered 'nigiri-zushi.'

17. それ（　）みんな（　）、カラオケバー（　）行きました。会社勤め（　）男（　）人達（　）たくさん来ていました。お酒（　）飲んでいる人（　）、マイク（　）持って歌（　）歌っている人（　）いました。

Sore (1) min-na (2), karaoke-baa (3) iki-mashita. Kaisha-zutome (4) otoko (5) hito-tachi (6) takusan kite i-mashita. Osake (7) nonde iru hito (8), maiku (9) motte uta (10) utatte-iru hito (11) i-mashita.

Then all of us went to a karaoke bar. There were many men who worked at companies who had come (to the bar). There were people who were (doing such things as) drinking sake and singing songs, holding a microphone.

18. きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）、同じ大学（　）勉強しています（　）、きみ子さん（　）専攻（　）英文学です。

Kimiko-san (1) watashi (2), onaji daigaku (3) ben-kyoo-shite-imasu (4), kimiko-san (5) senkoo (6) eebungaku desu.

Kimiko and I are studying at the same college, but Kimiko is majoring in English literature.

19. わたし達（　）大学（　）、渋谷（　）あります。

Watashi-tachi (1) daigaku (2), shibuya (3) ari-masu.

Our college is in Shibuya.

20. きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）、毎日地下鉄（　）バス（　）大学（　）通います

Kimiko-san (1) watashi (2), mainichi chikatetsu (3) basu (4) daigaku (5) kayoi-masu.

Kimiko and I commute to school by subway and bus every day.

Lesson 10

Comprehension Exercises. Complete the sentences below, using appropriate particles.

My Experience Living in Japan (B):

1. 今日（　）、わたし（　）日本（　）（　）生活（　）ついて、お話しましょう。

   Kyoo (1), watashi (2) nihon (3) (4) seekatsu (5) tsuite ohanashi-shi-mashoo.

   Today, I shall talk about my life in Japan.

2. わたし（　）、毎朝たいてい六時（　）起きます。シャワー（　）浴びて、身支度（　）すると、朝食です。

   Watashi (1), maiasa taitee roku-ji (2) oki-masu. Shawaa (3) abite, mi-jitaku (4) suru to, chooshoku desu.

   Every morning, I usually get up at six. After taking a shower and getting ready for school, I have breakfast.

3. 黒川さん（　）うち（　）朝食（　）、たいてい和風で、ご飯（　）おみそ汁（　）ほか（　）、ゆで卵（　）野菜（　）あります。

   Kurokawa-san (1) uchi (2) chooshoku (3), taitee wafuu de, gohan (4) omisoshiru (5) hoka (6), yude-tamago (7) yasai (8) ari-masu.

   Breakfast at the Kurokawas is usually Japanese style, and we have (there are) rice, and miso-soup, as well as boiled eggs, and vegetables.

4. わたし（　）日本食（　）大好きです（　）、納豆（　）（　）、まだどうしても食べられません。

Watashi (1) nihon-shoku (2) daisuki desu (3), nattoo (4) (5), mada dooshitemo taberare-masen.

I love Japanese food, but natto is the only thing I can't eat yet, no matter what.

5. きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）、うち中（　）一番早くうち（　）出ます（　）、弟（　）伸二君（　）、学校（　）近いので、七時半ごろうち（　）出ます。

Kimiko-san (1) watashi (2), uchijuu (3) ichiban haya-ku uchi (4) de-masu (5), otooto (6) shinji-kun (7), gakkoo (8) chikai node shichi-ji han goro uchi (9) de-masu.

In the family, Kimiko and I leave home the earliest, but Kimiko's brother, Shinji, leaves home around seven-thirty, since his school is close to the house.

6. 黒川さん（　）ご主人（　）社長さんです（　）、毎朝会社（　）車（　）、八時ごろ黒川さん（　）迎え（　）来ます。

Kurokawa-san (1) goshujin (2) shachoo-san desu (3), mai-asa kaisha (4) kuruma (5), hachi-ji goro kurokawa-san (6) mukae (7) ki-masu.

Since Mr. Kurokawa is the president, his compnay car (his chauffeur) comes to pick him up about eight o'clock every morning.

7. 朝大学（　）着いて（　）午後（　）授業（　）終わる（　）、きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）別々（　）校舎（　）勉

強(きょう)します。

Asa daigaku (1) tsuite (2) gogo (3) jugyoo (4) owaru (5), kimiko-san (6) watashi (7) betsu-betsu (8) koosha (9) benkyoo-shi-masu.

After we arrive at school, until our afternoon classes are over, Kimiko and I study in separate buildings.

8. 日本語(にほんご)（　）先生(せんせい)（　）名前(なまえ)（　）池上(いけがみ)（　）言(い)って、若(わか)くてきれいな女(おんな)（　）人(ひと)です。

Nihongo (1) sensee (2) namae (3) ikegami (4) itte, wakakute kiree na on-na (5) hito desu.

The name of my Japanese teacher is Ikegami, and she is a young and beautiful woman.

9. 日本語(にほんご)（　）文法(ぶんぽう)（　）授業(じゅぎょう)（　）、週(しゅう)（　）五時間(ごじかん)（　）ありますし、会話(かいわ)（　）二時間(にじかん)あります。

Nihongo (1) bunpoo (2) jugyoo (3), shuu (4) go-jikan (5) ari-masu shi, kaiwa (6) ni-jikan ari-masu.

We have a Japanese grammar class (as much as) five hours a week, and we also have two hours of conversation class.

10. 日本語(にほんご)（　）クラス（　）（　）、アメリカ人(じん)（　）フランス人(じん)（　）ドイツ人(じん)（　）中国人(ちゅうごくじん)（　）います。

Nihon (1) kurasu (2) (3), amerika-jin (4) furansu-jin (5) doitsu-jin (6) chuugoku-jin (7) i-masu.

In my Japanese class, there are students (whose nationalities include) American, French, German and also Chinese.

11. 日本（　）文化（　）勉強するクラス（　）（　）、今、お茶（　）生け花（　）勉強（　）しています。きみ子さん（　）お母さん（　）生け花（　）先生です（　）、わたし（　）いろいろ教えてもらいます。

Nihon (1) bunka (2) benkyoo-suru kurasu (3) (4), ima, ocha (5) ikebana (6) benkyoo (7) shite-imasu. Kimiko-san (8) okaasan (9) ikebana (10) sensee desu (11), watashi (12) iro-iro oshiete morai-masu

In the class where we study Japanese culture, we are learning tea ceremony and flower arranging. Since Kimiko's mother is a teacher of flower arranging, I learn a lot from her.

12. 日本（　）歴史（　）勉強するクラス（　）（　）、明治維新（　）ついて（　）本（　）読んでいます。

Nihon (1) rekishi (2) benkyoo-suru kurasu (3) (4), meeji-ishin (5) tsuite (6) hon (7) yonde-imasu.

In the class in which we study about Japanese History, we are now reading a book on the Meiji Restoration.

13. お昼（　）たいてい学校（　）食堂（　）お友達（　）一緒（　）食べます。和食（　）洋食（　）あって、とてもおいしいです。

Ohiru (1) taitee gakkoo (2) shokudoo (3) otomodachi (4) issho (5) tabe-masu. Washoku (6) yoo-shoku (7) atte, totemo oishii desu.

Usually, I have lunch at the school cafeteria with my friends. Both Japanese and Western style foods are available, and they are delicious.

14. 四時（　）授業（　）終わる（　）、きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）一緒（　）うち（　）帰ります。

Yoji (1) jugyoo (2) owaru (3), kimiko-san (4) watashi (5) issho (6) uchi (7) kaeri-masu.

When school is over at four o'clock, Kimiko and I go home together.

15. 夕食（　）楽しいひとときです。きみ子さん（　）お父さん（　）とても忙しくて、会社（　）終わって（　）（　）、外国（　）（　）お客さん（　）会ったりします（　）、普段（　）わたし達（　）一緒（　）夕食（　）食べること（　）あまりありません。

Yuushoku (1) tanoshii hitotoki desu. Kimiko-san (2) otoosan (3) totemo isogashiku te, kaisha (4) owatte (5) (6), gaikoku (7) (8) okyaku-san (9) attari shi-masu (10), fudan (11) watashi-tachi (12) issho (13) yuushoku (14) taberu koto (15) amari ari-masen.

Dinner time is a fun time. But since Kimiko's father is very busy, and even after work, he has meetings with visitors from foreign countries, he seldom has a chance to have dinner with us.

16. でも、きみ子さん（　）お父さん（　）夜九時ごろ（　）（　）うち（　）帰って来ます（　）、みんな（　）一緒（　）お茶（　）飲んだりお菓子（　）食べたりしながら、学校（　）こと（　）話します。弟（　）伸二君（　）一緒です。

Demo, kimiko-san (1) otoosan (2) yoru ku-ji goro (3) (4) uchi (5) kaette ki-masu (6), min-na (7) issho (8) ocha (9) nondari okashi (10) tabe-tari shi-nagara, gakkoo (11) koto (12) hanashi-masu. Ototo (13) shinji-kun (14) issho desu.

However, when Kimiko's father comes home at around nine o'clock, all of us drink tea and eat sweets while we talk about things (that happened) at school. Kimiko's brother, Shinji, (chats) with us, too.

17. 毎日宿題（　）たくさんあるので、きみ子さん（　）わたし（　）夜十二時（　）勉強します。

Mainichi shukudai (1) takusan aru node, kimiko-san (2) watashi (3) yoru juuni-ji (4) benkyoo-shi-masu.

Because we have a lot of homework assignments every day, Kimiko and I study until twelve o'clock midnight.

18. きみ子さん（　）英語（　）わからない時（　）、わたし（　）教えてあげますし、わたし（　）日本語（　）わからない時（　）きみ子さん（　）教えてくれます。

Kimiko-san (1) eego (2) wakara-nai toki (3), watashi (4) oshiete-age-masu shi, watashi (5) nihongo (6) wakara-nai toki (7) kimiko-san (8) oshiete-kure-masu.

When Kimiko does not understand English, I help (teach) her, and in return, when I don't understand Japanese, Kimiko teaches me.

19. 時々シカゴ（　）友達（　）手紙（　）来ます。わたし（　）シカゴ（　）日本語（　）習った横山先生（　）（　）手紙

（　　）書きます。

Toki-doki shikago (　1　) tomodachi (　2　) tegami (　3　) ki-masu. Watashi (　4　) shikago (　5　) nihongo (　6　) na-ratta yokoyama-sensee (　7　) (　8　) tegami (　9　) kaki-masu.

I sometimes get a letter from my friend in Chicago. I also write letters to Mrs. Yokoyama from whom I learned Japanese.

20. わたし（　　）毎朝シャワー（　　）浴びます（　　）、日本（　　）お風呂（　　）大好きです（　　）、夜よくお風呂（　　）入ります。ストレス（　　）とれて、いい気持ちです。

Watashi (　1　) mai-asa shawaa (　2　) abi-masu (　3　), nihon (　4　) ofuro (　5　) daisuki desu (　6　), yoru yoku ofuro (　7　) hairi-masu. Sutoresu (　8　) torete ii kimochi desu.

Although I take a shower every morning, because I love Japanese baths, I often take a bath in the evening. It rids me of stress, and makes me feel good.

ANSWER KEYS

【Lesson 1】

1. 1-か(ga)
2. 1-は(wa)
3. 1-が(ga)
4. 1-は(wa)
5. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
6. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
7. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa)
8. 1-が(ga)
9. 1-は(wa)
10. 1-は(wa)
11. 1-が(ga)
12. 1-が(ga)
13. 1-が(ga)
14. 1-は(wa)
15. 1-が(ga)
16. 1-が(ga)
17. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
18. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-が(ga)/は(wa)
19. 1-が(ga)
20. 1-が(ga)
21. 1-が(ga)
22. 1-は(wa)
23. 1-は(wa)
24. 1-は(wa)
25. 1-は(wa)
26. 1-が(ga)
27. 1-が(ga)
28. 1-が(ga)
29. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
30. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa), 3-は(wa)

【Lesson 2】

1. 1-は(wa)
2. 1-が(ga)
3. 1-が(ga)
4. 1-も(mo)
5. 1-は(wa)
6. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
7. 1-も(mo), 2-が(ga)
8. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
9. 1-は(wa)
10. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
11. 1-も(mo), 2-が(ga)
12. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga)
13. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
14. 1-も(mo), 2-が(ga)
15. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
16. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa)
17. 1-は(wa)
18. 1-も(mo)
19. 1-も(mo)
20. 1-も(mo)
21. 1-は(wa)
22. 1-が(ga)
23. 1-も(mo)
24. 1-も(mo)
25. 1-が(ga)
26. 1-が(ga)
27. 1-は(wa) 2-が(ga)
28. 1-は(wa), 2-も(mo), 3-も(mo)
29. 1-も(mo), 2-も(mo), 3-が(ga)
30. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-は(wa)

【Lesson 3】

1. 1-の(no), 2-が(ga)/は(wa)
2. 1-の(no), 2-も(mo)
3. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa)
4. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga)
5. 1-の(no)
6. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
7. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
8. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga)
9. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-が(ga)
10. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga)
11. 1-の(no), 2-も(mo), 3-も(mo)
12. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga), 4-が(ga), 5-の(no), 6-は(wa), 7-が(ga)
13. 1-の(no), 2-も(mo), 3-が(ga)

14. 1-の(no), 2-も(mo)
15. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa)
16. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-が(ga)
17. 1-の(no), 2-も(mo)
18. 1-は(wa)
19. 1-が(ga), 2-が(ga)
20. 1-が(ga)
21. 1-も(mo), 2-も(mo), 3-が(ga)
22. 1-が(ga)
23. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa)
24. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga)
25. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-も(mo)
26. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga)
27. 1-の(no), 2-が(ga)
28. 1-が(ga), 2-が(ga)
29. 1-は(wa), 2-が(ga), 3-が(ga), 4-の(no), 5-は(wa), 6-も(mo), 7-も(mo)
30. 1-が(ga), 2-も(mo), 3-も(mo), 4-も(mo)

【Lesson 4】

1. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
2. 1-で(de)
3. 1-を(o)
4. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
5. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
6. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
7. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
8. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
9. 1-を(o)
10. 1を(o), 2-で(de)
11. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
12. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
13. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
14. 1-で(de)
15. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
16. 1-で(de), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
17. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
18. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
19. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
20. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
21. 1-を(o), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
22. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)
23. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
24. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
25. 1-で(de), 2-を(o), 3-を(o)
26. 1-で(de), 2-を(o), 3-で(de)
27. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
28. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
29. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
30. 1-で(de), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)

【Lesson 5】

1. 1-を(o), 2-で(de), 3-に(ni)
2. 1-へ(e)/に(ni), 2-で(de)
3. 1-で(de), 2-に(ni), 3-を(o)
4. 1-に(ni), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
5. 1-を(o), 2-へ(e)/に(ni)
6. 1-に(ni), 2-で(de)
7. 1-に(ni), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
8. 1-で(de), 2-へ(e)/に(ni), 3-で(de), 4-を(o)
9. 1-へ(e)/に(ni), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
10. 1-に(ni), 2-に(ni), 3-を(o)
11. 1-に(ni), 2-で(de)
12. 1-へ(e)/に(ni), 2-に(ni), 3-を(o)
13. 1-を(o), 2-に(ni)
14 1-に(ni), 2-を(o), 3-で(de), 4-を(o), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)
15. 1-に(ni), 2-で(de), 3-を(o)
16. 1-で(de), 2-を(o)
17. 1-で(de), 2-に(ni), 3-で(de), 4-を(o)
18. 1-を(o), 2-に(ni), 3-へ(e)/に(ni), 4-で(de), 5-を(o)
19. 1-に(ni), 2-へ(e)/に(ni), 3-に(ni)
20. 1-で(de), 2-に(ni), 3-を(o)
21. 1-に(ni), 2-を(o)
22. 1-で(de), 2-に(ni)
23. 1-に(ni), 2-を(o), 3-で(de)
24. 1-に(ni), 2-を(o), 3-へ(e)/に(ni)
25. 1-を(o), 2-で(de)/を(wo), 3-に(ni)/へ(ni), 4-を(o), 5-に(ni)
26. 1-で(de), 2-に(ni), 3-に(ni), 4-で(de), 5-を(o)
27. 1-に(ni), 2-を(o), 3-で(de)
28. 1-を(o), 2-へ(e)/に(ni), 3-を(o)
29. 1-で(de), 2-を(o), 3-へ(e)/に(ni)
30. 1-を(o), 2-で(de), 3-に(ni), 4-に(ni), 5-を(o), 6-を(o)

【Lesson 6】

1. 1-から(kara)
2. 1-まで(made)
3. 1-から(kara)
4. 1-から(kara), 2-へ(e)/に(ni), 3-まで(made), 4-へ(e)/に(ni)
5. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made)
6. 1-から(kara), 2-から(kara), 3-まで(made)
7. 1-から(kara)
8. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made)
9. 1-から(kara)
10. 1-まで(made), 2-に(ni), 3-から(kara), 4-まで(made)
11. 1-まで(made)/に(ni)/へ(e), 2-から(kara)
12. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made)
13. 1-まで(made), 2-から(kara)
14. 1-から(kara), 2-に(ni)
15. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made)
16. 1-に(ni), 2-から(kara), 3-に(ni)
17. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made), 3-に(ni)
18. 1-まで(made), 2-に(ni), 3-から(kara)
19. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made)
20. 1-まで(made), 2-に(ni)
21. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made), 3-に(ni)
22. 1-に(ni), 2-から(kara)
23. 1-に(ni), 2-から(kara)
24. 1-まで(made), 2-から(kara), 3-へ(e)/に(ni)
25. 1-まで(made), 2-から(kara),3-に(ni), 4-まで(made)/に(ni), 5-まで(made), 6-に(ni), 7-に(ni)
26. 1-から(kara), 2-から(kara), 3-まで(made), 4-に(ni), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)
27. 1-が(ga), 2-から(kara), 3-に(ni), 4-まで(made), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)
28. 1-まで(made), 2-から(kara), 3-へ(e)/に(ni), 4-まで(made), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)
29. 1-から(kara), 2-まで(made), 3-に(ni), 4-から(kara)
30. 1-に(ni), 2-から(kara), 3-に(ni), 4-まで(made), 5-から(kara), 6-まで(made), 7-に(ni), 8-へ(e)/に(ni)

【Lesson 7】

1. 1-だけ(dake), 2-だけ(dake)
2. 1-や(ya), 2-や(ya), 3-と(to)
3. 1-と(to), 2-だけ(dake)
4. 1-と(to), 2-しか(shika)
5. 1-ぐらい(gurai), 2-だけ(dake), 3-しか(shika)
6. 1-と(to), 2-と(to)
7. 1-と(to), 2-や(ya)
8. 1-と(to), 2-しか(shika)
9. 1-と(to), 2-だけ(dake), 3-ぐらい(gurai)
10. 1-だけ(dake),2-ぐらい(gurai), 4-しか(shika)
11. 1-しか(shika), 2-ぐらい(gurai)
12. 1-くらい(kurai)
13. 1-ぐらい(gurai)
14. 1-や(ya), 2-くらい(kurai), 3-しか(shika)
15. 1-と(to), 2-と(to)
16. 1-と(to), 2-や(ya), 3-だけ(dake)
17. 1-しか(shika), 2-だけ(dake), 3-ぐらい(gurai)
18. 1-だけ(dake), 2-しか(shika), 3-ぐらい(gurai)
19. 1-だけ(dake), 2-しか(shika)
20. 1-や(ya), 2-ぐらい(gurai), 3-しか(shika)

【Lesson 8】

1. 1-と(to), 2-と(to), 3-の(no)
2. 1-と(to), 2-と(to)
3. 1-より(yori), 2-の(no)
4. 1-ほど(hodo)
5. 1-より(yori), 2-の(no), 3-ほど(hodo)
6. 1-と(to), 2-で(de)
7. 1-と(to), 2-と(to), 3-の(no), 4-で(de)
8. 1-ほど(hodo), 2-より(yori)
9. 1-より(yori), 2-の(no)

10. 1-で(de), 2-より(yori), 3-で(de)
11. 1-より(yori), 2-ほど(hodo)
12. 1-と(to), 2-と(to), 3-と(to), 4-で(de)
13. 1-より(yori), 2-の(no), 3-ほど(hodo)
14. 1-と(to), 2-で(de), 3-の(no)
15. 1-で(de), 2-より(yori), 3-の(no), 4-の(no)
16. 1-と(to), 2-で(de), 3-の(no), 4-の(no), 5-より(yori)
17. 1-と(to), 2-の(no), 3-で(de)
18. 1-ほど(hodo), 2-の(no), 3-より(yori)
19. 1-の(no), 2-と(to), 3-と(to), 4-で(de), 5-の(no), 6-より(yori)
20. 1-の(no), 2-の(no), 3-で(de), 4-より(yori), 5-の(no), 6-ほど(hodo)

【Lesson 9】

1. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-と(to)
2. 1-は(wa), 2-から(kara), 3-で(で), 4-を(o)
3. 1-は(wa), 2-の(no), 3-に(ni), 4-から(kara), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)
4. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa), 3-が(ga), 4-の(no), 5-で(de), 6-の(no), 7-を(o), 8-の(no),9-も(mo)10-から(kara), 11-が(ga)/は(wa)
5. 1-で(de), 2-は(wa), 3-だけ(dake), 4-の(no), 5-や(ya), 6-や(ya), 7-も(mo)
6. 1-の(no), 2-に(ni), 3-は(wa), 4-に(ni), 5-が(ga), 6-で(de),7-は(wa), 8-を(o), 9-は(wa),10-と(to)
7. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-の(no)
8. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-の(no)
9. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-の(no), 4-の(no), 5-が(ga)
10. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-を(o), 4-と(to), 5-と(to)
11. 1-の(no), 2-に(ni), 3-と(to), 4-が(ga), 5-が(ga), 6-は(wa)
12. 1-は(wa), 2-に(ni), 3-から(kara), 4-と(to), 5-を(o), 6-から(kara)
13. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa)/に(ni), 3-の(no), 4-が(ga), 5-と(to),6-を(o), 7-で(de), 8-へ(e)/に(ni)
14. 1-は(wa), 2-の(no), 3-へ(e)/に(ni), 4-も(mo), 5-が(ga), 6-が(ga), 7-の(no), 8-は(wa), 9-の(no),10-と(to)
15. 1-で(de), 2-から(kara), 3-へ(e)/に(ni)
16. 1-は(wa), 2-で(de), 3-へ(e)/に(ni), 4-の(no), 5-に(ni), 6-を(o)
17. 1-から(kara), 2-で(de), 3-へ(e)/に(ni), 4-の(no),5-の(no),6-が(ga), 7-を(o), 8-や(ya), 9-を(o), 10-を(o), 11-も(mo)
18. 1-と(to), 2-は(wa), 3-で(de), 4-が(ga), 5-の(no), 6-は(wa)
19. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-に(ni)
20. 1-と(to), 2-は(wa), 3-と(to), 4-で(de), 5-へ(e)/に(ni)

【Lesson 10】

1. 1-は(wa), 2-の(no), 3-で(de), 4-の(no), 5-に(ni)
2. 1-は(wa), 2-に(ni), 3-を(o), 4-を(o)
3. 1-の(no), 2-の(no), 3-は(wa), 4-と(to), 5-の(no), 6-に(ni),7-や(ya), 8-も(mo)
4. 1-は(wa), 2-は(wa)/が(ga), 3-が(ga),4-だけ(dake), 5-は(wa)
5. 1-と(to), 2-は(wa), 3-で(de), 4-を(o), 5-が(ga), 6-の(no), 7-は(wa), 8-が(ga), 9-を(o)
6. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-から(kara), 4-の(no), 5-が(ga), 6-を(o), 7-に(ni)
7. 1-に(ni), 2-から(kara), 3-の(no), 4-が(ga), 5-まで(made), 6-と(to), 7-は(wa), 8-の(no), 9-で(de)
8. 1-の(no), 2-の(no), 3-は(wa), 4-と(to), 5-の(no)
9. 1-の(no), 2-の(no), 3-は(wa), 4-に(ni), 5-も(mo), 6-も(mo)
10. 1-の(no), 2-に(ni), 3-は(wa), 4-や(ya), 5-や(ya), 6-や(ya), 7-も(mo)
11. 1-の(no), 2-を(o), 3-で(de), 4-は

(wa), 5-と(to), 6-の(no), 7-を(o), 8-の(no), 9-は(wa), 10-の(no), 11-から(kara), 12-は(wa)

12. 1-の(no), 2-を(o), 3-で(de), 4-は(wa), 5-に(ni), 6-の(no),7-を(o)
13. 1-は(wa), 2-の(no), 3-で(de), 4-と(to), 5-に(ni), 6-も(mo), 7-も(mo)
14. 1-に(ni), 2-が(ga), 3-と(to), 4-と(to), 5-は(wa), 6-に(ni), 7-へ(e)/に(ni)
15. 1-は(wa), 2-の(no), 3-は(wa),4-が(ga),5-から(kara), 6-も(mo),7-から(kara), 8-の(no), 9-と(to), 10-から(kara), 11-は(wa), 12-と(to), 13-に(ni), 14-を(o), 15-は(wa)
16. 1-の(no), 2-は(wa), 3-に(ni), 4-は(wa), 5-へ(e)/に(ni), 6-から(kara), 7-で(de), 8-に(ni), 9-を(o), 10-を(o),11-の(no), 12-を(o), 13-の(no), 14-も(mo)
17. 1-が(ga), 2-も(mo), 3-も(mo), 4-まで(made)
18. 1-が(ga), 2-が(ga), 3-は(wa), 4-が(ga), 5-が(ga), 6-が(ga), 7-は(wa), 8-が(ga)
19. 1-の(no), 2-から(kara), 3-が(ga), 4-は(wa), 5-で(de), 6-を(o), 7-に(ni), 8-も(mo), 9-を(o)
20. 1-は(wa), 2-を(o), 3-が(ga), 4-の(no), 5-が(ga), 6-から(kara), 7-に(ni), 8-が(ga)

PATTERNS

【A】

about — "ni tsuite について" 192

according to — "... ni yotte ～によって(... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで)" 128

according to (topic)... — "... to ie ba ～といえば," "... nara ba ～ならば" 1

again — "mata mo ya またもや" 246

also — "... mo ... ～も～" 91

although — "to yuu noni というのに," "ii noni いいのに" 167

and — "... ta nari ～たなり" 113

and — "(noun) to (noun) ～と～" 201

... and ... — the same verb is repeated with "ni に" in between 131

... and ... — "... shi ... shi ～し～し" 180

... and ... (like crazy) — "... (t)te ... (t)te ... makuru ～(っ)て～(っ)て～まくる" 191

(doing verb) and/while then (doing verb) — "... tari ... tari ～たり～たり" 188

anyone — "dare shimo だれしも" 184

as — "... no yoo na ～のような," "... no yoo ni ～のように" 153

as for — "ttara ... nai ったら～ない" 186

as for ... and ... — "... to ii ... to ii ～といい～といい" 210

as if — "ga gotoku がごとく" 38

as well as — "... mo ... mo ～も～も" 93

at — "de wa では," "de mo でも" 20

at — "... ni yotte ～によって(... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで)" 128

at — "kore nite これにて," "koko nite ここにて" ... 142

at all — "marukkiri まるっきり" 75

【B】

because ... — "naze nara ba なぜならば" 4

(precisely) because — "... kara koso ～からこそ" or "... ba koso ～ばこそ" 76

because (someone) said ... — "to yuu node と言うので" 161

between — "... kara ... made ～から～まで" 57

between — "(noun) to (noun) ～と～ " 201

both — "... mo ... mo ～も～も" 93

but — "to yuu noni というのに," "ii noni いいのに" 167

by	"... ni yotte ～によって(... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで)" 128
【C】	
cannot do ... even if (I) were to try	" (verb) ni mo にも (verb) zu/nai ず/ない" ... 136
concerning	"ni tsuite について" 192
considering (something, it is evident that ...)	"... suru to ～すると," "... shita tokoro ga ～したところが" 2
【D】	
do (something), but ...	"koso sure こそすれ" 76
doesn't make much difference	"... de mo ～でも" or "... te mo ～ても" 94
doesn't matter	"... de mo ～でも" or "... te mo ～ても" 94
due to	"... ni yotte ～によって(... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで) 128
【E】	
either ... or	"... mo ... mo ～も～も" 93
even	"sae ... dakara さえ～だから" 179
(even if I were to ...)	"doose ... keredomo どうせ～けれども" 72
even more	"mashite ya ましてや" 246
even though	"... kara to itte ～からといって" 63
even though	"to yuu noni というのに" "ii noni いいのに" 167
every possible (thing/method)	"ari to arayuru ... ありとあらゆる～" 209
everyone	"dare shimo だれしも" 184
exactly as (something)	"ga mama ni がままに" 38
【F】	
from	"... ni yotte ～によって(... ni yori ～により/... ni yore ba ～によれば/... ni yora-nai de ～によらないで)" 128
from ... till	"... kara ... made ～から～まで" 83
from/to	"... kara ... made ～から～まで" 57
from ... to	"... kara ... made ～から～まで" 83
【H】	
have/has just done (something)	"... ta bakari ～たばかり" 7
(he/she) says ...	"datte だって" 234
..., (he/she said)	"te sa てさ," "to sa とさ" 178
【I】	
..., (I hear)	"te sa てさ," "to sa とさ" 178
I regret ...	"... deshoo ni ～でしょうに," "... de aroo ni ～であろうに,""... daroo ni ～だろうに," "... deshita deshoo ni ～でしたでしょうに," "... datta deshoo ni ～だったでしょうに," "... datta roo ni ～だったろうに" 135
((I) remember)	"dakke だっけ," "dattakke だったっけ" 69

I suppose ... "... deshoo ni ～でしょうに," "... de aroo ni ～であろうに," "... daroo ni ～だろうに," "... deshita deshoo ni ～でしたでしょうに," "datta deshoo ni ～だったでしょうに," "... datta roo ni ～だったろうに" 135

I sympathize ... "... deshoo ni ～でしょうに," "... de aroo ni ～であろうに," "... daroo ni ～だろうに," "... deshita deshoo ni ～でしたでしょうに," "... datta deshoo ni ～だったでしょうに," "... datta roo ni ～だったろうに" 135

I wish (it) would ... "... nai kana ～ないかな" 53

if only there were (something), even just a little bit of it... "semete... demo... せめて～でも～" 28

in "de wa では," "de mo でも" 20

in "kore nite これにて," "koko nite ここにて" ... 142

in/at (location) and in/at (location) ... "... demo ... demo ～でも～でも" 19

in any case ... "nani wa to mo are 何はともあれ" 221

in terms of (topic)... "... to ie ba ～といえば," "... nara ba ～ならば" 1

it is certain that ..., but "... ni wa ... keredo(ga) ～には～けれど(が)" 134

it's not as if ... "aru mai shi あるまいし." 182

【J】

just by doing... "... kara ni ～からに" 65

【L】

let us say ... "iwa ba いわば," "tatoe ba たとえば" 4

like "... no yoo na ～のような," "... no yoo ni ～のように" 153

【M】

more of a ... than ... "to yuu yori というより" 257

must do (something) "ne ba nara-nai ねばならない," "nakere ba nara-nai/nari-masen なければならない/なりません" 3

【N】

neither ... nor ... "... mo ... ba ～も～ば" 3

no matter ... "don-na ni ... tomo どんなに～とも," "doredake ... tomo どれだけ～とも" 218

no matter (something) "... u ga ～うが," "... mai ga ～まいが" 39

no matter what/how (something) ... "don-na ... demo どんな～でも 27

not all bad "manzara ... demo まんざら～でも" 28

not necessarily ... "kanarazu shimo 必ずしも" 184

not only ... "nomi narazu のみならず" 166

not only ... but (also) ... "... dake de(ja) naku ... mo ～だけで(じゃ)なく～も" 12

not only all ..., but ...	"... to iwa zu ... to iwa zu ～といわず～といわず"	213
not only (something), but also (something)...	"bakari ka ばかりか"	8
(not only ..., but) ... also	"... bakari de naku ... sae ～ばかりでなく～さえ"	180
not unthinkable	"manzara ... demo まんざら～でも"	28
(nothing else) to do besides ...	"yori hoka よりほか"	255
now that	"... kara ni wa ～からには"	64
【O】		
one after another	"... kara ... e ～から～へ"	58
or	"(noun) to (noun) ～と～ "	201
... or ...	"... ka ... ka ～か～か"	47
... or ...	"... yara ... yara ～やら～やら"	249
(or)	"... no ... no ～の～の"	156
(number) or (number)	"... ka ... ～か～"	48
... or something/someone	"to yara とやら"	248
【R】		
(receive favor from ... by request)	"... te morau(... te morai-masu) ～てもらう(～てもらいます)"	132
regardless of	"... de mo ～でも" or "... te mo ～ても"	94
regardless of the fact that...	"don-na ... demo どんな～でも"	27
【S】		
since	"... kara ni wa ～からには"	64
since/because..., (as expected) ...	"dake atte だけあって"	13
since it was so ...	"a(n)mari ... node あ(ん)まり～ので"	161
so to speak	"iwa ba いわば," "tatoe ba たとえば"	4
solely due to (one cause), matters took a turn for the worse.	"bakari ni ばかりに"	6
(something) and (something) also	"... mo ... ba ～も～ば"	3
speaking of (topic)...,	"... to ie ba ～といえば," "... nara ba ～ならば"	1
such as	"... no yoo na ～のような," "... no yoo ni ～のように"	153
such as ... (and ...)	"... ya ... nado ～や ～など"	108
【T】		
that (would ...) ...	"sore koso それこそ"	76
the more (something), the...	"... ba ... dake ～ば～だけ"	12
the more ..., the more	"... suru hodo ～するほど," "... ba ... hodo ～ば ～ほど"	44
the reason being...	"naze nara ba なぜならば"	4
things like (something) and (something)	"... dano ... dano ～だの～だの"	14

this/that many — "koo mo こうも (kon-na ni こんなに)," "soo mo そうも (son-na ni そんなに)," "aa mo ああも (an-na ni あんなに)" 97
this/that much — "koo mo こうも (kon-na ni こんなに)," "soo mo そうも (son-na ni そんなに)," "aa mo ああも (an-na ni あんなに)" 97
(this was the situation) when (something else happened) — "... tokoro e ～ところへ" 34
..., (to be sure) ... — "... (de) wa ... (da) ga, ～(で)は～(だ)が" ... 239
too — "... mo ... ～も～" 92
(turn) into — "... ni naru (nari-masu) ～になる(なります)" or "... ni kawaru (kawari-masu) ～に変る(変ります)" 123

【W】

wasn't it so that ... — "... de wa/ja nai ka ～ではないか/じゃないか" 50
what is/was it ...? — "dakke だっけ," "dattakke だったっけ" 69
when is/was it ...? — "dakke だっけ," "dattakke だったっけ" 69
whether it's (something) or (something)... — "... datte ... datte ～だって～だって" (or, variation: "... tatte ... tatte ～たって～たって") ... 15
whether or not — "... nari ... nari ～なり～なり" 114
(whether) ... or not — "... (a verb) yoo to ... mai to ～(よ)うと～まいと" 205
whether (you) do (something) or not, it doesn't matter... — "... u ga ～うが," "... mai ga ～まいが" 39
while doing... — "... ta nari ～たなり" 113
why don't you do ... — "... tara doo ka ～たらどうか" 51
with — "kore nite これにて," "koko nite ここにて" ... 142
without ... or ... — "... to naku ... to naku ～となく～となく" 209

GLOSSARY (English-Japanese)

【A】

a ... or something	nari なり	114
a fact	no の	154
a matter	no の	154
about	hodo ほど	43
about	kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)	79
about	mo も	95
about	no の	149
accompanied by	to と	202
according to	de で	25
according to	kara から	62
according to	ni に	128
after doing ..., (not once done ...)	kiri きり	74
against	to と	203
..., all right?	no の	155
..., all right.	tomo とも	219
also	mo も	92
also	ni-mo にも (C.P.)	136
although	ga が	39
although	monono ものの	102
although	mono-o ものを	104
although	noni のに	167
although (usually) ...	tokoro-o ところを	217
always just doing (something)	bakari はかり	5
among	de で	19
and	ni に	127, 129
and	te て	191
and	to と	200
... (and) ..., so ...	shi し	181
... and ... (among other things/ places)	ya や	242
and ... (other things)	yara やら	249
anyone	datte だって	16
anytime	datte だって	16
anywhere	datte だって	16
approximately	bakari ばかり	7
approximately	hodo ほど	43
approximately	kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)	79
around	mo も	95
as	kara から	61

as	ni に	127
as	to-shi-te として (C.P.)	222
as a token of	ni に	127
as far as	made まで	84, 86
as far (a distance) as	mo も	95
as for ...,	ga が	38
as for	to-shite-wa としては (C.P.)	225
as for ...,	wa は	236
as for ..., also/too ...	to-shite-mo としても (C.P.)	223
as long a time as	mo も	95
as many as	kara から	60
as many/much as	mo も	95
as much as ...	dake だけ	11
as much as	kara から	60
as soon as	nari なり	113
as soon as	to と	208
as soon as	ya や	243
as soon as ...	ya-ina-ya やいなや (C.P.)	247
as well as	mo も	95
as you've already heard ...,	ga が	38
at	de で	18, 20, 23
at	e へ	33
at	kara から	56
at	ni に	119, 124, 125, 128
at	ni-shite にして	140
at	no の	149, 150
(at)	o を	175
... at a time	zutsu ずつ	259
at least	temo ても	197
at least	tomo とも	219
at most	temo ても	197
at most	tomo とも	219
【B】		
because	kara から	61
because	mono もの	98
because	mono-de(mon-de) もので(もんで)	100
because	node(n-de) ので(んで)	161
because	te て	190
(because)	node(n-de) ので(んで)	162
(because)	no-de aru のである	163
before	made-ni までに	90
belong to	no の	144
between	no の	148
but	ga が	39
but	keredomo けれども	70

but	kuse-ni くせに (C.P.)	82
but	noni のに	167
but	tokoroga ところが	217
... but ...	shi し	181
by	de で	23, 25
by	kara から	62
by	ni に	128, 131
by	no の	148
by	te て	191
by/from the fact that ...	no-de ので	162
by way of	ni に	127
【C】		
... called/named ...	to yuu という	227
(the color of)	no の	151
concerning	ni-oite において	139
considering	kara から	61
considering (something, it is evident that ...)	ba ば	2
consequently	kara-shite からして	66
continuously only doing ...	kiri きり	74
could only do (something)	bakari ばかり	5
could (you) do ...	kashira かしら	68
created by	no の	148
【D】		
depending on	de で	25
despite	temo ても	196
despite doing (something)	ga が	39
despite that fact	ni-mo-kakawara-zu にもかかわらず (C.P.)	138
(I'm sorry that I) did not do ..., but ...	n de んで	115
do (verb) and ...	te て	190
do (something) by using (something)	de で	21
do you want to ...	ka か	50
(doing verb) and/while then (doing verb)	tari たり	188
doing only one thing all the time	bakari ばかり	5
don't ...	na な	107
don't say that ...	to-iwa-zu といわず (C.P.)	212
due to ...	de で	24
due to	kara から	61, 63
due to	ni に	128
due to ...	nite にて	142
【E】		
(quantity) each ...	zutsu ずつ	259
even	demo でも	26

even	made まで	86
even	mo も	97
even	ni-mo にも (C.P.)	136
even	sae さえ	179
even if (I) were to ...	tte って	234
even if (you) were to ...	tatte たって	189
even if (you) were to ...	tokorode ところで	215
even if (you) were to ...	to-shite-mo としても (C.P.)	224
(even) if (you) were to do ...	ni-shite-mo にしても (C.P.)	140
even (something) is/does ...	datte だって	15
(even) though	domo ども	30
even though	keredomo けれども	70
even though	kuse-ni くせに (C.P.)	82
even though	monono ものの	102
even though	nagara ながら	111
even though	nagara-mo ながらも (C.P.)	112
even though	ni-mo-kakawara-zu にもかかわらず (C.P.)	137
even though	noni のに	167, 168
even though	tatte たって	189
even though	te て	192
even though	to-wa-ie とはいえ (C.P.)	227
even though (it's not to the extent that) ...	made-mo までも (C.P.)	88
even while doing ...	nagara-mo ながらも (C.P.)	111
every	to-yuu-to というと (C.P.)	231
every single ...	to-yuu という (C.P.)	229
every time	to-yuu-to というと (C.P.)	231
(excuse me, but)	keredomo けれども	72
【F】		
for	de で	23
for	e へ	33
for	kara から	61
for	ni に	125, 127
for	ni-shite-wa にしては (C.P.)	141
for (i.e. as a means for doing ...)	no-ni のに (C.P.)	169
from	de で	23, 25
from	kara から	54, 55, 56, 59, 63
from	ni に	126, 128
from	no の	150, 152
(from)	o を	175
from	yori より	255, 256
from a viewpoint of	kara から	62
【H】		
he/she said that ...	datte だって	17
how about ...?	koto こと	79

however	keredomo けれども	73
however	to-itte といって (C.P.)	212
【I】		
I'd thought (I)'d done (something) but ...	ga が	41
I hear	tte って	234
I hear	to yuu という (C.P.)	228
I hope..., though	ga-na(ga-naa) がな(がなあ) (C.P.)	42
I'm wondering if I could ...	ga が	40
(I say)	te て	194
(I said)	teba てば	195
(I said) ..., (do ... already!)	tara たら	187
(I) think/(I) will do ...	ka-na(ka-naa)かな(かなあ) (C.P.)	53
I wish ...	kashira かしら	68
I wish ...	na(naa) な(なあ)	106
I wish (it) would ...	ka-na(ka-naa) かな(かなあ) (C.P.)	53
I wonder ...	kashira かしら	68
I wonder ...	yara やら	250
(I) wonder ...?	ka-na(ka-naa) かな(かなあ)	52
(I) wonder ...	kashira かしら	66
(I) wonder ...	no-daroo のだろう(C.P.)	159
if ...	ba ば	1
if	ka か	46
if	to と	208
(if ...), but...	keredomo けれども	71
(if ...), can/would do ..., (but...)	ga が	40
(if ...), can/would do ..., (but...)	noni のに	168
if (I) were to ...	te-wa ては	198
if only ...	mono-o ものを	104
if only	sae さえ	179
if ... then	mononara(mon-nara) ものなら(もんなら)	101
if (we) say that, then ...	to-yuu-to というと (C.P.)	231
if (you think) you can ...	mononara (mon-nara) ものなら(もんなら)	102
in	de で	18, 19
in	kara から	55
in	ni に	119, 121, 124, 125
in	ni-oi-te において (C.P.)	139
in	no の	150, 151
in addition	mo も	95
in addition	ni に	129
in (amount of time)	de で	21
in doing ...	no-ni のに (C.P.)	169
in order to do ...	ni に	130
in order to ...	no-ni のに (C.P.)	169
in referring to	wa は	235

in the field of	ni-oite において (C.P.)	139
in the manner of	to と	207
(in this manner) ...	de で	24
(indeed)	koso こそ	75
... -ing	ni に	134
into	ni に	121
Is it true that ...?	tte って	233
isn't it ...	koto こと	78
is/are probably ...	no-daroo のだろう (C.P.)	159
it's not necessary to ...	made-mo までも (C.P.)	88
it's said	to yuu という...	228
(it so happened that ...)	no deshita のでした	165
【J】		
judging from	kara から	62
just	bakashi ばかし	10
just	dake だけ	10
just	kiri きり	74
just	made まで	87
just about to do (something)	bakari ばかり	7
just for/to ...	made-ni までに (C.P.)	89
just when ...	tokoro-e ところへ (C.P.)	216
【K】		
keep doing ...	tewa ては	200
【L】		
let's ...	ka か	50
let's leave the ...	to-shi-te として (C.P.)	222
like	nado(nanka) など(なんか)	109
【M】		
(made of)	no の	147
merely	made まで	87
【N】		
never (not even once)	to と	204
never mind ...	to-mo-are ともあれ (C.P.)	220
never mind (something)...	dokoroka どころか	29
no ...	mo も	96
no better than	yori より	256
no fewer/less than	mo も	95
no less than	kara から	60
no matter ...	temo ても	196
no one	datte だって	16
not all bad	demo でも	28
not any	mo も	96
(not) any more (than)	shika しか	182
(not) as much/little as ...	hodo ほど	44
(not) as much as	to と	204

(not) ..., either	mo も	92
(not) even ...	sura すら	185
not even ...	to-shi-te として (C.P.)	223
not having done ...	n de んで	115
not possible to do, (for example)	dokoro どころ	29
not unthinkable	demo でも	28
nothing	datte だって	16
nothing	mo も	96
nothing except for ...	hoka ほか	45
numbering	to-yuu という (C.P.)	228
【O】		
of	de で	23
of	kara から	54
of	kara から	59
of	no の	144, 145, 148, 149, 152, 157
..., okay?	ne(nee) ね(ねえ)	117
on	de で	25
on	ni に	119, 121,124
on	no の	149, 150
on	o を	176
on the basis of	yori より	256
one	no の	152
only	bakashi ばかし	10
only	dake だけ	10
only	hoka ほか	45
only	kiri きり	74
only	nomi のみ	166, 167
(only) about ...	bakashi ばかし	9
only if	sae さえ	179
only (this) and nothing else	shika しか	182
... or something	nante なんて	112
out of	kara から	55, 59, 63
over	no の	150
owing to ...	de で	24
owing to ...	nite にて	142
【P】		
per	ni に	125
perhaps because of ...	ka か	47
perhaps it's because ...	no-deshoo のでしょう (C.P.)	164
please	te-ne てね (C.P.)	198
putting aside ...	to-mo-are ともあれ (C.P.)	220
【R】		
rather than doing ...	kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)	81
regardless of	temo ても	196
..., right?	na な	106

..., right?	ne(nee) ね(ねえ)	116
【S】		
... say (that)	tte って	232
seeing	kara から	61
shall we?	ya や	244
should (I/we) do ...	kashira かしら	67
should there be ...	**mononara (mon-nara)** ものなら（もんなら）	101
since	kara から	56, 61
since	mono もの	99
since	node(n-de) ので(んで)	161
since/because ..., (as expected) ...	dake-ni だけに (C.P.)	13
since (... was not expected) ...	dake-ni だけに (C.P.)	13
..., so	mono もの	99
so	kara から	61
(something) is/was done by (something)	de で	26
something like ...	demo でも	27
(something like)	kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)	80
something (like) ...	nado(nanka) など(なんか)	108
something like ...	nado(nanka) など(なんか)	109
something like ..., (I hear)	toka とか	214
(something) that ...	to-yuu という	228
speaking of ...	teba てば	195
speaking of ...	to ie-ba といえば (C.P.)	210
(speaking of)	tte って	232
starting with ...	kara-shite からして (C.P.)	65
such a thing like	tari たり	188
such as	to itta といった (C.P.)	211
such as ... and ... (and ..., etc.)	toka とか	213
【T】		
than	yori より	253, 254
that (introduces a clause or a phrase)	to と	206
that means ...	**to-yuu-no-wa** というのは **(C.P.)**	230
that which is	no の	149
the (noun) called ...	tte って	232
the fact is that ...	no の	155
the moment ...	ya や	243
the one	no の	152
the reason (for that) ...	to-yuu-no/wa というのは (C.P.)	230
the (thing) that is called ...	to-wa とは (C.P.)	225
there is no choice but	shika しか	183
they say	to-yuu という (C.P.)	228
(they) say	tte って	234
(this is what I think), but ...	ga が	40

though	keredomo けれども	70
through	kara から	55
through	o を	176
till	made まで	83
to	e へ	32
to	e へ	33
to	made まで	83, 84, 86
to	ni に	121, 122, 125, 132
to	no の	148
to do ...	ni に	130
to tell the truth	no の	155
to the extent of	made まで	86
to the extent that ...	hodo ほど	43
to the extent that ...	kurai(gurai) くらい(ぐらい)	80
to think that ...	to-wa とは (C.P.)	226
too	mo も	92
totaling	to-yuu という (C.P.)	228
towards	e へ	32
【U】		
until	made まで	83, 86
up to	made まで	85
(up to)	made-ni までに	90
【W】		
what is/was it ...?	ke け	69
whatever ...	demo でも	27
when	te-wa ては (C.P.)	199
when	to と	208
when	tokoro ところ	215
when	ya や	243
when (something happens)... (instead of "if ...")	ba ば	1
whenever	demo でも	27
when is/was it ...?	ke け	69
whether ...?	ka か	46
while	ni-shite にして	140
while doing ..., (also doing ...)	nagara ながら	110
while doing ..., on the way, do ...	gatera がてら	42
why don't we ...	ka か	50
why don't we ...?	koto こと	79
why don't you do ...	ka か	51
with	ni に	126, 127
with	no の	144, 148
with	te て	191
with	te-wa ては (C.P.)	199
with	to と	202

with
(with intention to) ...
within
would we?
would you ...?
【Y】
yet
(you) are asking/saying ...?
(you) did ..., remember?

to-wa とは (C.P.) 225
de で 24
made まで 85
ya や 244
te-ne てね (C.P.) 198

keredomo けれども 73
tte って 233
kuse-ni くせに 82

GLOSSARY (Japanese-English)

【B】

ba ば	"considering (something, it is evident that ...)"	2
ba ば	"if ..."	1
ba ば	"when (something happens) ... (instead of "if ...")"	1
bakari ばかり	"always just doing (something)" "doing only one thing all the time"	5
bakari ばかり	"approximately"	7
bakari ばかり	"could only do (something)"	5
bakari ばかり	"just about to do (something)"	7
bakashi ばかし	"just"	10
bakashi ばかし	"only"	10
bakashi ばかし	"(only) about ..."	9

【D】

dake だけ	"as much as ..."	11
dake だけ	"only" "just"	11
dakeni だけに	"since/because ..., (as expected) ..."	13
dakeni だけに	"since (...was not expected) ..."	13
datte だって	"anyone" "anytime" "anywhere"	16
datte だって	"even (something) is/does ..."	15
datte だって	"he/she said that ..."	17
datte だって	"no one" "nothing"	16
de で	"at"	20
de で	"at" "in"	18
de で	"at" "for"	23
de で	"by" "for"	23
de で	"by" "from" "on" "according to"	25
de で	"depending on" "according to"	25
de で	"do (something) by using (something)"	21
de で	"due to ..." "owing to ..."	24
de で	"from" "of"	23
de で	"in" "among"	19
de で	"in (amount of time)"	21
de で	"(in this manner) ..." "(with intention to) ..."	24
de で	"(something) is/was done by (something)"	26
demo でも	"even"	26
demo でも	"not all bad" "not unthinkable"	28
demo でも	"something like ..."	27
demo でも	"whatever" "whenever"	27

dokoro どころ — "not possible to do, (for example)" ····· 29
dokoroka どころか — "never mind (something) ..." ····· 29
domo ども — "(even) though" ····· 30

【E】

e へ — "at" ····· 33
e へ — "to" "for" ····· 33
e へ — "to" "towards" ····· 32

【G】

ga が — "as" "as for" "as you've already heard ..." 38
ga が — "but" "despite doing (something)" "although" 39
ga が — "I'd thought (I)'d done (something) but ..." ··· 41
ga が — "I'm wondering if I could ..." "(this is what I think), but ..." ····· 40
ga が — "(if ...), can/would do ..., (but ...)" ····· 40
ga-na(ga-naa) がな(がなあ) — "I hope ..., though ..." ····· 42
gatera がてら — "while doing ..., on the way, do ..." ····· 42

【H】

hodo ほど — "about" "approximately" ····· 43
hodo ほど — "(not) as much/little as ..." ····· 44
hodo ほど — "to the extent that ..." ····· 43
hoka ほか — "nothing except for ..." "only" ····· 45

【K】

ka か — "if" "whether" ····· 46
ka か — "perhaps because of ..." ····· 47
ka か — "why don't we ..." "do you want to ..." "let's ..." ····· 50
ka か — "why don't you do ..." ····· 51
ka-i かい — (not translatable) ····· 52
ka-na(ka-naa) かな(かなあ) — "(I) think/(I) will do ..." ····· 53
ka-na(ka-naa) かな(かなあ) — "I wish (it) would ..." ····· 53
ka-na(ka-naa) かな(かなあ) — "(I) wonder ...?" ····· 52
kara から — "as" "so" "since" "due to" "for" "because" "considering" "seeing" ····· 61
kara から — "as many as" "as much as" "no less than" 60
kara から — "from a viewpoint of" "judging from" "by" "according to" ····· 62
kara から — "from" "at" "since" ····· 56
kara から — "from" "of" ····· 54
kara から — "from" "of" "out of" ····· 59
kara から — "from" "out of" "due to" ····· 63
kara から — "from" "through" "out of" "in" ····· 55
kara-shite からして — "consequently" ····· 66
kara-shite からして — "starting with ..." ····· 65
kashira かしら — "I wish ..." "could (you) do ..." ····· 68
kashira かしら — "(I) wonder ..." ····· 66

kashira かしら "I wonder ..." 68
kashira かしら "should (I/we) do ..." 67
ke け "when is/was it ...?" "what is/was it ...?" ... 69
keredomo (keredo, kedo, kedomo) けれども (けれど, けど, けども) "even though" "but" 70
keredomo (keredo, kedo, kedomo) けれども (けれど, けど, けども) "(excuse me, but)" 72
keredomo (keredo, kedo, kedomo) けれども (けれど, けど, けども) "however" "yet" 73
keredomo (keredo, kedo, kedomo) けれども (けれど, けど, けども) "(if ...), but ..." 71
keredomo (keredo, kedo, kedomo) けれども (けれど, けど, けども) "though" "but" 70
kiri きり "after doing ..., (not once done ...)" 74
kiri きり "continuously only doing ..." 74
kiri きり "only" "just" 74
koso こそ "(precisely) because" 76
koso こそ "(indeed)" 75
koto こと "how about ...?" "why don't we ...?" 79
koto こと "isn't it ..." 78
kurai (gurai) くらい (ぐらい) "about" "approximately" 79
kurai (gurai) くらい (ぐらい) "rather than doing ..." 81
kurai (gurai) くらい (ぐらい) "(something like)" 80
kurai (gurai) くらい (ぐらい) "to the extent that ..." 80
kuse-ni くせに "even though" "but" 82
kuse-ni くせに "(you) did ..., remember?" 82

【M】

made まで "even" 86
made まで "just" "merely" 87
made まで "to" "as far as" 84
made まで "to" "till" "until" 83
made まで "until" "to" "as far as" "to the extent of" ... 86
made まで "up to" "within" 85
made-mo までも "even though (it's not to the extent that) ..." 88
made-mo までも "it's not necessary to ..." 88
made-ni までに "before" 90
made-ni までに "just for/to ..." 89
made-ni までに "(up to)" 90
mo も "also" "too" "(not) ..., either" 92
mo も "around" "about" 95
mo も "as many/much as" "no fewer/less than" "as long a time as" "as far (a distance) as" ... 95
mo も "even" 97
mo も "in addition" "as well as" 95
mo も "not any" "no ..." "nothing" 96

mo も	"this/that many" "this/that much"	95
mo も	"too" "also" "both" "as well as" "either ... or"	93
mono もの	"because"	98
mono もの	"since" "..., so"	99
mono-de(mon-de) もので(もんで)	"because"	100
monoka(monka) ものか(もんか)	(not translatable)	100
mononara(mon-nara) ものなら(もんなら)	"if ... then"	101
mononara(mon-nara) ものなら(もんなら)	"if (you think) you can ..."	102
mononara(mon-nara) ものなら(もんなら)	"should there be ..."	101
monono ものの	"even though" "although"	102
mono-o ものを	"although"	104
mono-o ものを	"if only ..."	104
【N】		
na な	"don't ..."	107
na な	"..., right?"	106
na(naa) な(なあ)	"I wish ..."	106
nado(nanka) など(なんか)	"like"	109
nado(nanka) など(なんか)	"something (like) ..."	108
nado(nanka) など(なんか)	"something like ..."	109
nagara ながら	"even though"	111
nagara ながら	"while doing ..., (also doing ...)"	110
nagara-mo ながらも	"even though"	112
nagara-mo ながらも	"even while doing ..."	111
nante なんて	"... or something"	112
nari なり	"a ... or something"	114
nari なり	"as soon as"	113
n-de んで	"(I'm sorry that I) did not do ..., but ..."	115
n-de んで	"not having done ..."	115
ne(nee) ね(ねえ)	"..., okay?"	117
ne(nee) ね(ねえ)	"..., right?"	116
ni に	"and" "in addition"	129
ni に	"and" "with"	127
ni に	"as a token of" "as" "for" "by way of"	127
ni に	"at" "in" "on"	119
ni に	"at" "to" "in" "for" "per"	125
ni に	"by"	131
ni に	"by" "at" "according to" "from" "due to"	128
ni に	"from" "with"	126
ni に	"... -ing"	134
ni に	"on" "in" "at"	124
ni に	"to" "in" "on" "into"	121
ni に	"to"	122

ni に — "to" ····· 132
ni に — "to do ..." "in order to do" ····· 130
ni-mo にも — "even" "also" ····· 136
ni-mo-kakawara-zu にもかかわらず — "despite that fact" ····· 138
ni-mo-kakawara-zu にもかかわらず — "even though" ····· 137
ni-oi-te において — "concerning" "in the field of" ····· 139
ni-oi-te において — "in" ····· 139
ni-shite にして — "while" "at" ····· 140
ni-shite-mo にしても — "(even) if (you) were to do ..." ····· 140
ni-shite-wa にしては — "for" ····· 141
nite にて — "at" "with" "in" ····· 142
nite にて — "due to ..." "owing to ..." ····· 142
no の — "a fact" "a matter" ····· 154
no の — "..., all right?" ····· 155
no の — "at" "in" "on" "over" "from" ····· 150
no の — "in" ····· 151
no の — "(made of)" ····· 147
no の — "of" ····· 145
no の — "of" "belong to" "with" ····· 144
no の — "of" "by" "with" "between" "to" ····· 148
no の — "of" "created by" ····· 148
no の — "of" "from" ····· 147
no の — "of" "on" "about" "at" ····· 149
no の — "of" "from" ····· 152
no の — "one" "the one" ····· 152
no の — "that which is" ····· 149
no の — "(the color of)" ····· 151
no の — "the fact is that ..." "to tell the truth" ····· 155
no-da(n-da) のだ(んだ) — (not translatable) ····· 158
no-daroo のだろう — "is/are probably ..." "(I) wonder ..." ····· 159
node(n-de) ので(んで) — "(because)" ····· 162
node(n-de) ので(んで) — "since" "because" ····· 161
no-de ので — "by/from the fact that ..." ····· 162
no-de aru のである — "(because)" ····· 163
no deshita のでした — "(it so happened that ...)" ····· 165
no deshoo のでしょう — "perhaps it's because ..." ····· 164
nomi のみ — "only" ····· 166, 167
noni のに — "even though" ····· 168
noni のに — "(if...), can/would do ..., (but...)" ····· 168
no-ni のに — "for (i.e. as a means for doing ...)" ····· 169
no-ni のに — "in order to ..." "in doing ..." ····· 169

【O】

o を — "(at)" "(from)" ····· 175
o を — "on" "through" ····· 176

【S】
sa さ (not translatable) ····· 178
sae さえ "even" ····· 179
sae さえ "if only" "only if" ····· 179
shi し "... (and) ..., so ..." ····· 181
shi し "... but ..." ····· 181
shika しか "(not) any more (than)" "only (this) and nothing else" ····· 182
shika しか "there is no choice but" ····· 183
sura すら "(not) even ..." ····· 185
【T】
tara たら "(I said) ..., (do ... already!)" ····· 187
tari たり "such a thing as" ····· 188
tatte たって "even if (you) were to ..." ····· 189
tatte たって "even though" ····· 189
te て "and" ····· 191
te て "because" ····· 190
te て "by" "with" ····· 191
te て "do (verb) and ..." ····· 190
te て "even though" ····· 192
te て "(I say)" ····· 194
teba てば "(I said)" ····· 195
teba てば "speaking of ..." ····· 195
temo ても "at most" "at least" ····· 197
temo ても "despite" "regardless of" ····· 196
temo ても "no matter ..." ····· 196
te-ne てね "please" "would you ...?" ····· 198
te-wa ては "if (I) were to ..." ····· 198
te-wa ては "keep doing ..." ····· 200
te-wa ては "with" "when" ····· 199
to と "against" ····· 203
to と "and" ····· 200
to と "if" "when" ····· 208
to と "in the manner of" ····· 207
to と "(not) as much as" "never (not even once)" 204
to と "that" ····· 206
to と "that (introduces a clause or a phrase)" ····· 201
to と "when" "as soon as" ····· 208
to と "with" "accompanied by" ····· 202
to-ie-ba といえば "speaking of ..." ····· 210
to itta といった "such as" ····· 211
to itte といって "however" ····· 212
to-iwa-zu といわず "don't say that ..." ····· 212
toka とか "something like ..., (I hear)" ····· 214
toka とか "such as ... and ... (and ..., etc.)" ····· 213

tokoro ところ "when" ····· 215
tokorode ところで "even if (you) were to ..." ····· 215
tokoro-e ところへ "just when ..." ····· 216
tokoroga ところが "but" ····· 216
tokoro-o ところを "although (usually) ..." ····· 217
tomo とも "..., all right" ····· 219
tomo とも "at least" "at most" ····· 219
to-mo-are ともあれ "putting aside ..." "never mind ..." ····· 220
to-shi-te として "as" ····· 222
to-shi-te として "let's leave the ..." ····· 222
to-shi-te として "not even ..." ····· 223
to-shite-mo としても "as for ..., also/too ..." ····· 223
to-shite-mo としても "even if (you) were to ..." ····· 224
to-shite-wa としては "as for" ····· 225
to-wa とは "the (thing) that is called ..." ····· 225
to-wa とは "to think that ..." ····· 226
to-wa とは "with" ····· 225
to-wa-ie とはいえ "even though" ····· 227
to-yuu という "... called/named ..." ····· 227
to-yuu という "every single ..." ····· 229
to-yuu という "I hear" "they say" "it's said" ····· 228
to-yuu という "numbering" "totaling" ····· 228
to-yuu という "(something) that ..." ····· 228
to-yuu-koto-wa ということは "that means ..." ····· 229
to-yuu-no-wa というのは "the reason (for that) ..." ····· 230
to-yuu-to というと "every" "every time" ····· 231
to-yuu-to というと "if (we) say that, then ..." ····· 231
tte って "even if (I) were to ..." ····· 234
tte って "Is it true that ...?" ····· 233
tte って "... say (that)" ····· 232
tte って "(speaking of)" ····· 232
tte って "the (noun) called ..." ····· 232
tte って "(they) say" "I hear" ····· 234
tte って "(You) are asking/saying ...?" ····· 233

【W】

wa は "as for ..." "in referring to ..." ····· 236
wa わ (not translatable) ····· 239

【Y】

ya や "... and ... (among other things/places)" ····· 242
ya や "as soon as" "when" "the moment ..." ····· 243
ya や "shall we?" "would we?" ····· 244
yai やい (not translatable) ····· 246
ya-ina-ya やいなや "as soon as ..." ····· 247
yara やら "and ... (other things)" ····· 249
yara やら "I wonder ..." ····· 250

yo よ (not translatable) 251
yori より "from" 255
yori より "no better than" 256
yori より "on the basis of" "from" 256
yori より "than" 253, 254
【Z】
ze ぜ (not translatable) 258
zo ぞ (not translatable) 258
zutsu ずつ "... at a time" "(quantity) each ..." 259